



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

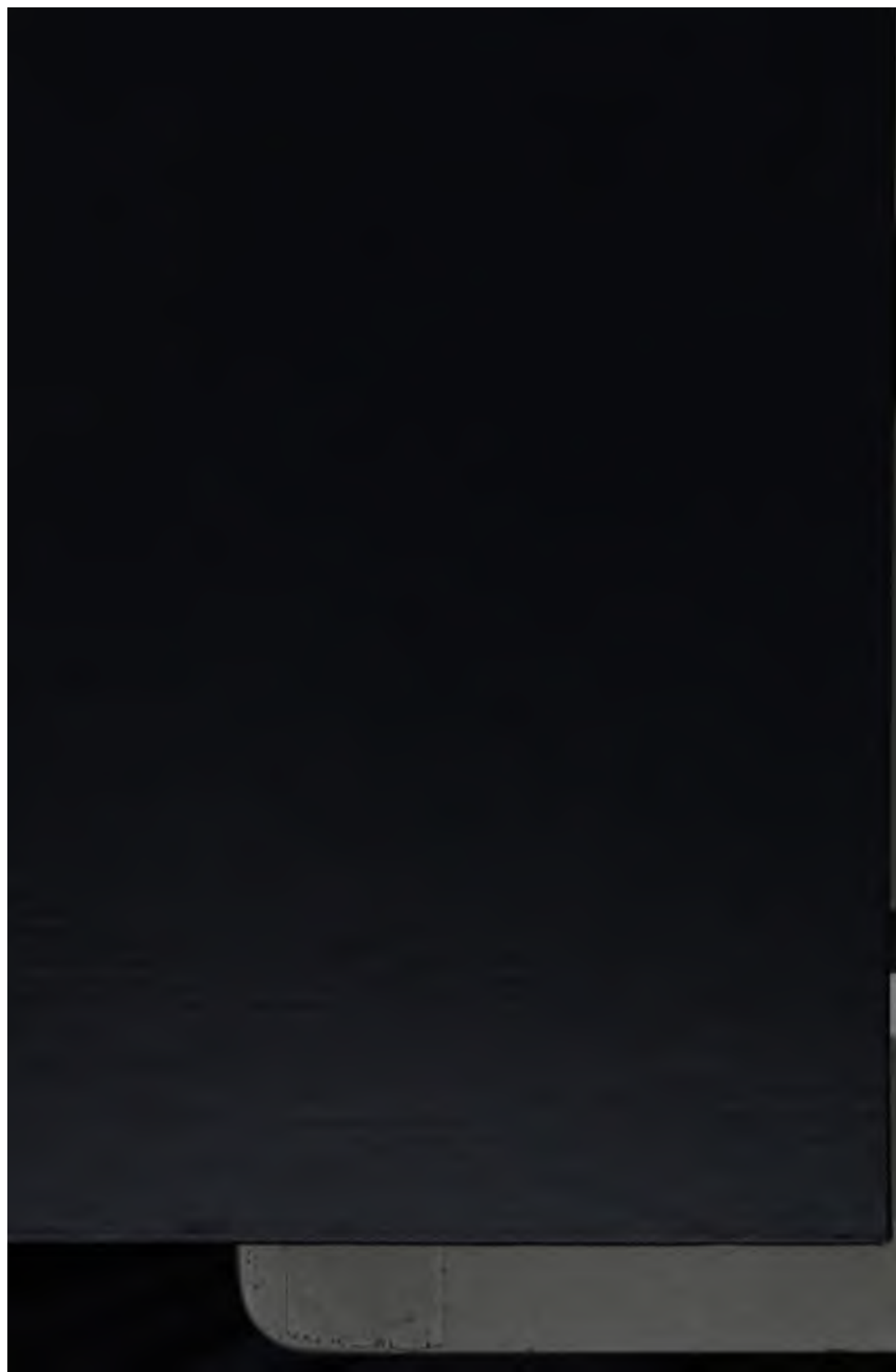
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

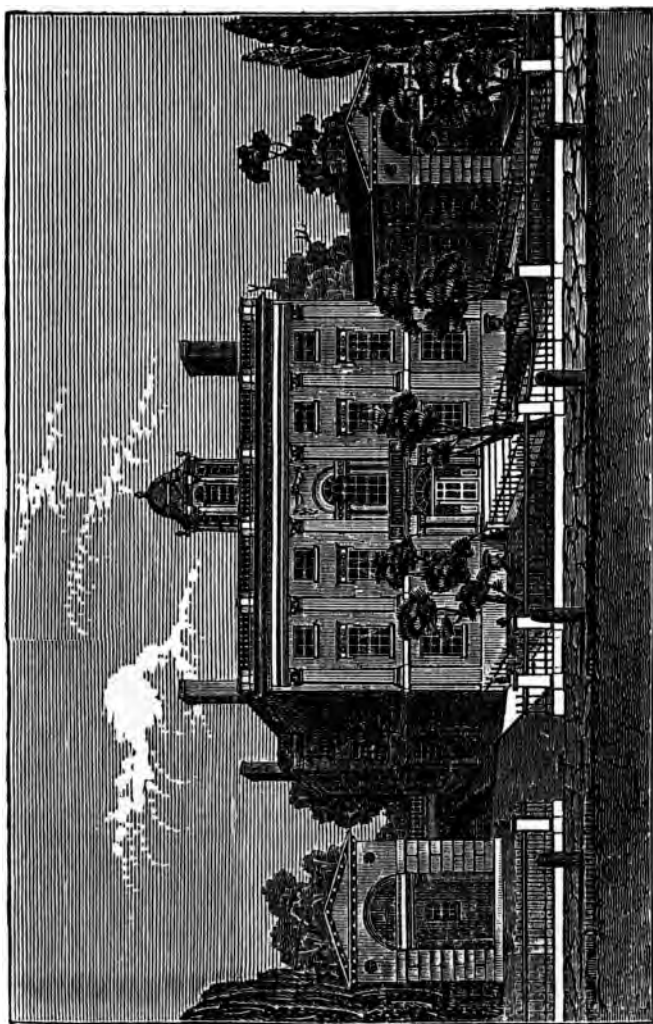
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY





THE OLD DERBY MANSION FORMERLY ON DERBY SQUARE. — (SEE PAGE 114.)

OLD NAUMKEAG:

AN HISTORICAL SKETCH OF

THE CITY OF SALEM,

AND THE TOWNS OF

MARBLEHEAD, PEABODY, BEVERLY, DANVERS,
WENHAM, MANCHESTER, TOPSFIELD,
AND MIDDLETON,

BY

C. H. WEBBER AND W. S. NEVINS.

ILLUSTRATED.

INTRODUCTION BY

HENRY L. WILLIAMS.

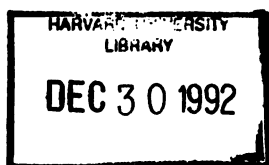
SALEM, MASS:

A. A. SMITH & COMPANY, PUBLISHERS.

BOSTON:—LEE & SHEPARD.

1877.

US 13437.8.5



Entered according to Act of Congress in the year 1877, by
C. H. WEBBER AND W. S. NEVINS,
in the office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

SALEM PRESS: F. W. PUTNAM & CO.,
SALEM.

vanced in life, find pleasure in retracing steps, leading back to the days of their youth, reviving recollections and associations ever dear, at the same time affording valuable information concerning their ancestry. We make no special claims to originality of material. On the contrary, we acknowledge our indebtedness, for most of the facts embodied in this work, to the antiquarians, living and dead, from the Rev. John Flske, and the Rev. John Higginson, down to the present. We have searched the voluminous collections and writings of these painstaking recorders of the past and endeavored to present, in a popular shape, such portions of them as are of the greatest interest at the present time. Limited space precludes the publication of very much more which is of deep interest. With more time and space the book could have been made better. Such as it is we submit it to the public, asking only that all should bear in mind that

"Whoever thinks a faultless piece to see,
Thinks what ne'er was, nor is, nor e'er shall be."

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
INTRODUCTION	vii
PREFACE	ix
SETTLEMENT OF SALEM	1-22
SALEM, PAST AND PRESENT	
CHAPTER I	23-56
CHAPTER II	57-79
CHAPTER III	80-112
CHAPTER IV	113-142
CHAPTER V	143-178
CHAPTER VI	179-208
CHAPTER VII	209-238
DANVERS AND PEABODY	239-261
MARBLEHEAD	262-274
BEVERLY	275-289
MANCHESTER	290-296
WENHAM	297-299
TOPSFIELD AND MIDDLETON	300-302



HALE'S BUILDING.

(SEE PAGES 127-8.)

SETTLEMENT OF SALEM.

A RESULT OF THE REFORMATION.—THE FEELING TOWARDS ENGLAND.—A DISAGREEMENT AT PLYMOUTH.—SETTLEMENT AT CAPE ANN.—REMOVAL TO NAUMKEAG.—MR. LYFORD DEPARTS.—GRANT OF MASSACHUSETTS BAY.—ENDICOTT ELECTED GOVERNOR; ARRIVES IN AMERICA.—DISSENT BETWEEN THE PLANTERS AND THE FOLLOWERS OF ENDICOTT.—ARRIVAL OF HIGGINSON, SKELTON AND OTHERS.—ESTABLISHMENT OF A CHURCH.—THE COVENANT.—JOHN AND SAMUEL BROWNE DRIVEN FROM SALEM.—ARRIVAL OF WINTHROP.—HIS REMOVAL TO CHARLESTOWN.—SALEM CEASES TO BE THE CAPITAL OF THE COLONY.—DIVISION OF THE TOWN.

THE settlement of New England was one of the results of the Reformation. Those hardy Puritans who first landed on these shores were Protestant dissenters, driven hither by religious persecution. To them this wilderness, with all its terrors, was the long desired refuge from the tyranny of the Established Church. They did not come for gain, nor for ease and comfort, though there were some adventurers who followed in their train thinking to enrich themselves. New England was, indeed, a wilderness into which every man must go with a sturdy self reliance and hew a path for himself, if he would have one. Those who came for gain and found it not, as many did, soon grew disheartened and returned to England; while those who were driven to seek these shores by obnoxious forms of worship, surmounted all obstacles and built for themselves homes in the

wilderness,—homes since grown to be great cities of commerce and manufactures, and to be seats of learning, wealth and refinement. They did not come here because of unjust laws or tyrannical rulers; they did not come with hatred toward the mother country; on the contrary, they entertained the kindest feelings toward her and all her people and rulers. While they could not support nor respect the enforced forms of worship then existing in that country, they grieved at the intolerance and corruptions. They loved old England at all times and under all circumstances. They were loyal to the flag. When departing from Holland for America they declined to sail under the Dutch flag and hoisted the flag of their native land. They could say with Cowper :—

“ England, with all thy faults I love thee still,—
My Country.”

In religious matters those who came to Salem differed somewhat from those who established themselves at Plymouth. The former were not true separatists from the Church of England; they were dissenters from its corruptions, its intolerance, and its formula only. In the words of the ministers at Salem, to John and Samuel Brown in 1629, they separated “not from the Church of England, but from its corruptions.” “We came away,” said they, “from the common prayer and ceremonies in our native land; in this place of liberty we cannot, we will not, use them.” On the other hand, the people who settled at Plymouth were separatists.

A few years after the settlement at Plymouth a number of persons led by Rev. John Lyford, dissatisfied with the extreme separation of the Colony and Church from the English Church, removed to Nantasket, near the entrance to Boston harbor, where they made a temporary settlement, and the next year (1625) removed again, this time to Cape Ann. Here they attempted to plant a farming, fishing and trading colony, and being joined by Mr. Lyford, and Roger Conant, the former was made preacher and the latter "governor." When Conant arrived at Cape Ann, which must have been some time in the fall of 1625, he found the affairs in an unsatisfactory state. The fishing had turned out unprofitable and there was much insubordination. He was unable to revive the interest, and in the fall of 1626 the settlement broke up, a portion of the people returning to England. Conant, it appears, had sailed up along the shores of the Cape as far as the mouth of the Naumkeag river during the summer of that year, and marked it as one evidently suitable as a "receptacle for such as upon the account of religion would be willing to begin a foreign plantation in this part of the world." Conant was a man of vigor and courage, and he succeeded on his return in breathing enough of his own spirit into those of the settlers who had not already returned, to induce them to follow him to Naumkeag; there to lay the foundation of a colony destined to plant the spirit of Puritanism so deeply and so firmly that amid the changes of two hundred and fifty years it still bears its impress.

Rev. Mr. White of Dorchester, England, who had been largely instrumental in planting the Cape Ann colony, felt grieved to learn that it must be abandoned, and in response to Conant's suggestion that a settlement might be effected at Naumkeag, wrote him that if he, John Balch, John Woodbury and Peter Palfry, would "stay at Naumkeag and give timely notice thereof, he would provide a patent for them and send them whatever they should write for, either men, provisions or goods to trade with the Indians." We are not to understand from this letter of White's that only three men accompanied Conant to Naumkeag from Cape Ann. He alluded to these, doubtless, because of their prominence in the colony, or, perhaps, because Conant had made particular mention of them in his letter to Mr. White. The number who came hence from Cape Ann was about twenty-five, or one-half of the settlement there. Aside from the women and children there were Roger Conant, Humphrey Woodbury, John Lyford, John Woodbury, John Balch, Peter Palfry, Walter Knight, William Allen, Thomas Gray, John Tylly, Thomas Gardner, Richard Norman and Son, William Trask, and William Jeffry. They left Cape Ann in September or October, 1626, taking with them all of their household goods and effects, and implements of husbandry. Their large frame house which was located a little to the westward of the site of the present city of Gloucester, on what is now known as "Stage Fort," they left standing. It was subsequently taken down and removed to Salem. Conant and his followers are thought to have landed from

the South River, not far from the foot of Elm or Central streets as now laid out.

The majority of the party are supposed to have settled along the line of the present Essex street, near the site of the present First Church, and extending towards Newbury street. Hardly had the first settlement been effected at Naumkeag, and preparations made for permanently abiding there, when dissatisfaction was manifested by some of the settlers. They were dissatisfied with the location, and with the prospects for the future, and they also professed a dread of interference from the Indians.

The desire to remove was heightened by the proposal of Mr. Lyford that they follow him to Virginia, whither he was to go at once. Several announced a determination to accept the offer. Had Conant consented to go with them, every member of the little wilderness settlement would have readily departed. But he would not go himself, and strongly urged the others to remain, declaring, that "they might go if they wished, and though all of them should forsake him, he should wait the providence of God in that place, not doubting that if they departed he should have more company." Again the reasoning of Conant prevailed and Lyford was obliged to depart unaccompanied. He died shortly after arriving at the Virginia settlement.

The mother country began to give increased attention to the infant colony at Naumkeag, and the prospects for the future were indeed cheering. In order that a better understanding might exist

between the settlers and the company in England, John Woodbury was dispatched thither in the latter part of 1627, "to explain their condition to those interested in their prosperity." He remained some six months, and his mission appears to have been successful. In the month of March, 1628, the council of Plymouth for New England, "disregarding a former grant of a large district on Charles River," conveyed to Sir Henry Roswell, Sir John Young, Thomas Southcoate, John Humphreys, John Endicott and Simon Whitcomb, "The soil then denominated Massachusetts Bay," which was described as lying "between three miles to the northward of Merrimack River, and three miles to the southward of Charles River, and in length within the described breadth, from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea."

This document bore date of March 19, 1628. Most of the grantees were from the vicinity of Dorchester. Through the active efforts of White they soon associated with themselves Sir Richard Saltonstall, John Winthrop, Isaac Johnson, Matthew Cradock, Increase Nowell, Thomas Goffe, Richard Bellingham, Theophilus Eaton, William Pynchon and several others, "of whom nearly all," says Bancroft, "united religious zeal with a capacity for vigorous action." Cradock was acting as Governor of the company, and Goffe, deputy governor. Roger Conant was the recognized agent at Naumkeag, but the company, though recognizing his ability and his great service in the past, thought best to select one of their own number to be the actual governor of

the colony, and therefore chose John Endicott, whom Gov. Bradford pronounced "a worthy gentleman." Endicott was a thorough nonconformist; a man of great moral courage, benevolence and firmness. The new Governor and his worthy wife, together with a few others, set sail for their new home, June 20, 1628, and arrived in Salem harbor on September 6, of the same year. There has been much controversy in the past as to whether Endicott is entitled to the honor of being the first Governor of Massachusetts. The question has never been settled; the difference seems to consist mainly in the meaning of the title. During Endicott's term, the meetings of the company were held in England, while under Winthrop they were held in Massachusetts.

Endicott sent back a "good report" of the new country, which induced others to join the plantation over which he had been appointed Governor, so that the number of inhabitants was now between fifty and sixty. But harmony did not long abide with them; before the close of the year 1628, dissensions arose between the first settlers, or followers of Conant, and their successors, or those who came over with Endicott. The former did not like being superseded and governed by those who had joined them after they had braved the dangers of making a settlement. The sale of the colony by the Dorchester proprietors to the Massachusetts Corporation, also contributed to the dissent. Still another cause, was the dispute over the propriety of tobacco growing. The first settlers desired to grow the

weed ; the new-comers, deeming it injurious to health and morals, objected, except for the purposes of medicine. The want of food and places of abode, together with "disastrous sickness," were added causes of embarrassment to the colony. Jealousy, induced, beyond doubt, by the differences of opinion, was the true cause of the ill-feeling. At times, it was bitter, and party spirit must have reached the height of these later days. Conant complained even that he and his followers were accounted little better than slaves. The remark does not, from all the facts, appear to have been fully justified. However, these differences of opinion were, to all outward appearances, soon harmonized. At a General Court, convened by Endicott in the following June, all "united in an effort to promote the common good." It was at this meeting that the name *Salem* (meaning peace) was substituted for that of Naumkeag. White, in his "Planter's Plea," tells us that it was done "upon a fair ground, in remembrance of a *peace* settled upon a conference at a general meeting between them and their neighbors, after expectance of some dangerous jar." Signs of this social eruption were discernible, however, for some years after.

The company at London was very thoughtful of the infant colony during this time. Cradock, its governor, wrote an encouraging letter to Endicott, in which he sent the cheering news that the company were about to send over "two or three ministers, and one hundred head of cattle;" that they had "bought one ship and hired two more," and desired

Mr. Endicott to secure houses for the occupancy of the emigrants; and "fish, timber, sturgeon, sasaparilla, sumac, silk-grass and beaver for a return cargo." In this letter, Cradock advised that the settlers be allowed to cultivate tobacco for a short time longer. The promise of re-enforcements and provisions was faithfully kept. On the fourth day of March, 1629, the King confirmed the grant of Massachusetts by the Plymouth Council for New England, which had been made during the previous year. The charter which thus received the royal assent, and which constituted a body politic by the name of the "Governor and Colony of the Massachusetts Bay in New England," was cherished for more than a half-century as a most precious boon. It was the constitution of a new republic. The charter was granted in March; and in April the new embarkation was well advanced. The departure for Salem took place on the sixteenth day of the same month. The number of persons who embarked was about two hundred; of whom about sixty were females—married and unmarried—and twenty-six children.

They took with them one hundred and forty head of cattle, besides food, arms, clothing, and tools. There were four ministers in the company. Two of them—Higginson and Skelton—were men of more than ordinary rank, and they were destined to play no unimportant part in the history of the new world. They had been selected for this mission by the home company which recognized the importance of religious instruction to a people whose professed object

in seeking these new homes was the propagating of a free gospel. Francis Higginson was a graduate of St. John's College, Cambridge; Samuel Skelton was from Clare Hall, Cambridge. Both were men of high standing, of brilliant parts. Both were in full sympathy with the colonists, who had preceded them to these shores or were now to accompany them.

The company was under a contract with Higginson by which they stipulated to pay him £30 to purchase the necessary apparel for the voyage; £10 for books, and a free passage for himself and family. His salary was to be £30, besides "firewood and diet." This for three years; at the end of that time he was to have one hundred acres of land, and an additional hundred at the end of the seventh year. He was also to have "the milk of two cows and half the increase of their calves, the company to have the other half and the cows at the end of the year."

The emigrants arrived at Salem in the latter part of June. Of Salem, at this time, Higginson writes: "When we came first to Naimkeck, now called Salem, we found about half a score houses built, and a large house newly built for the governor, and we found also abundance of corn planted by them, excellent good and well liking." This house, "newly built," was undoubtedly Conant's old Cape Ann house which had been taken down and moved to Salem. Some highly interesting correspondence passed between the home company and Mr. Higginson during the year. The letters from the company sound like

advice from a watchful parent to an absent son. In one letter idleness, is discountenanced: "Noe idle drone (is to) be permitted to live among us." Justice is urged in this spirit: "Wee hartely pray you to admit of all complaints that shall be made to you, or any of you that are of the councell, be the complaints never so meane, and pass it not slightly over but seriously examine the truth of the business." For the inculcation of good morals, "Wee pray you to make some good lawes for the punishment of swearers, whereof it is to be feared too many are adicted." The colony is advised to suppress intemperance by endeavoring "though there bee much strong water sent for sale, so to order it as that salvages may not for our lucre sake bee induced to excessive use, or rather abuse of it," and by punishing those "who shall become drunck." Allusion is also made in this letter to the growing of tobacco; and it urges that "noe tobacco bee planted unless it bee some small quantitie for mere necessitie and for phisick for preservacon of their healths, and that the same bee taken privately by ancient men and none others." The advice and instructions contained in this and other letters of which we have given but brief abstracts, laid the foundation of that high social and moral standard of life which became a marked characteristic of the people of the colony.

The twentieth day of July following the arrival of the new emigrants was set apart for holding a town meeting; or, in the language of the age, as "a solemn day of humiliation, for choyce of a pastor

and teacher for Salem." The meeting was opened with prayer and preaching, after which the vote was taken "by each one writing in a note the name of his choice." *This was the origin of the use of the ballot in this country.*¹ Skelton was thus chosen pastor, and Higginson, teacher. Having made choice of these, the sixth day of August was designated for the completion of the church organization. On that day deacons and ruling elders were chosen. Thus was fully constituted the First Church at Salem, and the "*first Protestant Church in America*, on the principle of the independence of each religious community." No liturgy was used; unnecessary ceremonies were rejected, and "the simplicity of Calvin was reduced to a still plainer standard."

The "confession of faith and covenant" adopted by the church on that day, was undoubtedly the work of the pious Higginson. It has been a question whether there was, in addition to this, a "test creed or sectarian articles of faith," which all were required to sign before being admitted to membership. The question is one which it would not be well to discuss in these pages. The evidence on either side is so voluminous as to preclude it if there were not other reasons. Careful examination of this evidence leads to a belief that the signing of the covenant alone constituted membership, coupled, of course, with good moral character. This covenant was probably the briefest church covenant the world has ever seen.

¹ Bancroft, vol. I, p. 271.

It is all in one sentence, and, short as is that sentence, it seems to contain sufficient for the foundation of a church. It reads :

“WE COVENANT WITH THE LORD, AND ONE WITH ANOTHER, AND DO BIND OURSELVES IN THE PRESENCE OF GOD, TO WALK TOGETHER IN ALL HIS WAYS, ACCORDING AS HE IS PLEASED TO REVEAL HIMSELF UNTO US, IN HIS BLESSED WORD OF TRUTH :”

The late Rev. Charles W. Upham, one of the worthy successors of Skelton in the pastorate of this church, in his rededicatory address in 1867, said : “It comprises in a condensed shape and surpassing simplicity, beauty and force of phrase, the piety, obedience and faith of servants of the Lord, and the freedom of every individual mind, with the love that ought to bind all believers, of every shade of doctrine, every form of worship, and every variety of denomination, into one body and one communion of Spirit.” Was not the doctrine embodied in this covenant, written two hundred and forty-eight years ago, far in advance of a large part of the civilized world of the present age? And is it not a most remarkable fact, that the first church organized in America, should rest on foundations which generation after generation, during a wonderfully progressive period, should be unable to improve? Any thing further than this, would have been in direct antagonism with the known views of Higginson and Skelton, and most of the other settlers. Their theology was the great law of RIGHT. Their religion was the religion of the GOLDEN RULE. The bible was their only recourse for the conduct of life.

The transcript of the first two pages of the old Church book, seems worthy of a place in this work, and is given as published in the "Essex Institute Bulletin," Vol. I, for 1856. The portion in small capitals, is the original covenant of 1629; that in Roman, is the portion added in 1636, when the covenant was renewed; and that in italic, is the portion added in 1660, when it was again renewed.

Gather my Saints together unto me that have made a Covenant with me by sacrifice. Psal. 50: 5.

Wee whose names are underwritten, members of the present Church of Christ in Salem, having found by sad experience how dangerous it is to sitt loose to the Covenant wee make with our God: and how apt wee are to wander into by pathes, even to the loosing of our first aimes in entring into Church fellowship: Doe therefore, solemnly in the presence of the Eternall God, both for our own comforts, and those which shall or maye be joyned unto us, renewe that Church Covenant we find this Church bound unto at their first beginning, viz.: That WE COVENANT WITH THE LORD AND ONE WITH AN OTHER; AND DOE BYNDE OURSELVES IN THE PRESENCE OF GOD, TO WALK TOGETHER IN ALL HIS WAIES, ACCORDING AS HE IS PLEASED TO REVEALE HIMSELF UNTO US IN HIS BLESSED WORD OF TRUTH. And doe more explicitly in the name and feare of God, profess and protest to walke as followeth through the power and grace of our Lord Jesus.

1. First wee avowe the Lord to be our God, and ourselves his people, in the truth and simplicitie of our spirits.

2. Wee give ourselves to the Lord Jesus Christ, and to the word of his grace, for the teaching, ruleing and sanctifying of us in matters of worship and conversation; resolving to cleave to him alone for life and glorie; and oppose all contrarie wayes, connons and constitutions of men in his worship.

3. Wee promise to walke with our brethren and sisters in this Congregation with all watchfullness and tenderness, avoyding all jelousies, suspitions, backbyttings, censurings, provoakings, secrete risings of spirit against them; but in all offences to follow the rule of the Lord Jesus, and to beare and forbear, give and forgive as he hath taught us.

4. In publick or private we will willingly doe nothing to the ofence of the Church, but will be willing to take advise for ourselves and ours as occasion shalbe presented.

5. Wee will not in the Congregation be forward eyther to shew oure owne gifts or parts in speaking or scrupling, or there discover the faylings of oure brethren and sisters, butt attend an orderly cale there unto; knowing how much the Lord may be dishonoured, and his Gospell in the professions of it, sleighted, by our distempers, and weaknesses in publyck.

6. Wee bynd our selves to studdy the advancement of the Gospell in all truth and peace, both in regard of those that are within, or without, noe waye sleighting our sister Churches, but useing theire counsell as need shalbe: nor laying a stumbling block before any, noe not the Indians, whose good we desire to promote, and soe to converse, as wee may avoyd the verrye appearance of evill.

7. Wee hearby promise to carrye our selves in all lawfull obedience to those that are over us, in church or common weale, knowing how well pleasing it will be to the Lord, that they should have incouragement in theire places by our not greiveing theyre spirites through our irregularities.

8. Wee resolve to approve ourselves to the Lord in our perticular calings, shunning ydlenes as the bane of any state, nor will we deale hardly, or oppressingly with any, wherein we are the Lord's stewards; alsoe promysing to our best abillitie

9. To teach our children and servants, the knowledge of God and his will, that they may serve him also; and

all this, not by any strength of our owne, but by the Lord Christ, whose bloud we desire may sprinkle this our covenant made in his name.

This Covenant was renewed by the Church on a solemn day of Humiliation, 6 of 1 moenth, 1660. When also considering the power of Temptation amongst us by reason of ye Quakers' doctrine to the leavening of some in the place where we are and endangering of others, doe see cause to remember the Admonition of our Saviour Christ to his disciples; Math. 16,—Take heed and beware of ye leaven of the doctrine of the Pharisees; and doe judge soe farre as we understand it yt ye Quakers' doctrine is as bad or worse than that of the Pharisees; Therefore we doe covenant by the help of Jesus Christ to take heed and beware of the leaven of the doctrine of the Quakers.

The simple form of worship established by the church was not acquiesced in by some at Salem. There were those who, though opposed to State censorship and to the intolerance and the corruptions of the Established Church did, nevertheless, believe in the liturgy and the common prayer. They were ably led by John and Samuel Browne, who gathered all the dissenters from the First Church and "upheld the common prayer worship." The strife between the factions was of short duration. In a few weeks, the Brownes were remanded back to England as "factious and evil-conditioned men." This action was sustained on the ground that "the success of the colony would be endangered by a breach of its unity;" that the co-existence of the liberty of the colonists with prelacy was not possible. The supporters of the liturgy reasoned that in a land where "liberty

of conscience and freedom of worship" was the paramount object, *they* ought to be allowed to worship with freedom.

"Their plea was reproved as sedition, and their worship was forbidden as a mutiny." This may have been sound reasoning and consistency in 1629, but it would hardly be deemed to be such in the latter half of the nineteenth century.

"For virtue's self may too much zeal be had,
The worst of madmen is a saint run mad."

The Brownes, on their return to England, spread "scandalous stories" regarding the sermons and other utterances of the ministers and others in the church here. But, fortunately, the ship which carried them back, bore also letters from those newly arrived here assuring friends in England of the beauties of the new land, and its freedom from the persecutions of the English Church. These letters were published and widely circulated. Their influence was magical. Hundreds of the persecuted expressed a desire to join the freedom-enjoying pilgrims in America.

The failure of other colonies did not dampen their ardor. Others had gone for gain and failed; they would go only for purity of religion, and they would know no failure. To them, death in the wilds of the new world, enjoying freedom to worship God according to the dictates of conscience, was preferable to any life in the old, worshipping after the formula of another.

Realizing that large numbers were to obey this

impulse and emigrate to Massachusetts, Cradock, the governor of the company, who had ever manifested a deep interest in the infant colony, at a meeting on July 28, 1629, moved "the transfer of the plantation to those that should inhabit there." On the twenty-sixth of the following month, John Winthrop, Isaac Johnson, Thomas Dudley, Richard Saltonstall, and eight others, "men of large fortunes and liberal culture," solemnly agreed that if the court would transfer to them the entire government and the charter of the colony, before the close of September, they would go and dwell in New England. Three days later, on a vote being taken "by a show of hands," it appeared that the request was granted, and it was ordered "that the government and patent be settled in New England;" so that the place of meeting of the company should be there, instead of in London. It was ostensibly a commercial operation; but it was actually the first step toward the formation of a future powerful and independent commonwealth. John Winthrop was chosen governor of the colony for one year. Humphrey was chosen deputy, and several assistants were selected. Humphrey resigning before the departure, Thomas Dudley was made his successor.

Winthrop and his seven hundred followers, in eleven ships, sailed from England on March 29, 1630. They arrived off Salem on June 10. "They were," says Bancroft, "a community of believers, professing themselves to be fellow-members of Christ; not a school of philosophers, proclaiming universal toleration and inviting associates without

regard to creed." Love of freedom of conscience and the forms of civil and religious liberty, which to them were as precious as their lives, and "reverence for their faith," were the incentives which moved them to cross the stormy Atlantic to new and untried shores, leaving their homes and their kindred three thousand miles behind. But they went gladly, hopefully; and not until they arrived at Salem, where they found the people poorly conditioned, suffering for want of food, clothing and shelter, and from diseases, did their zeal abate. More than eighty of the Salem plantation had died during the winter. Higginson, himself, lay at death's door. Those who were able thronged to the shore to meet the new-comers and beg for food. Such a greeting did not favorably impress Winthrop and his companions with Salem as a place of settlement; therefore, he and a number of others sailed into Boston harbor and up the Mystic river for a few miles.¹ On their return, Winthrop recommended a point about three miles up this river as one suitable for a settlement. Not all of the party were pleased with the location selected. Some remained in Salem, while others followed Winthrop, and, landing at Charlestown, scattered to Watertown, Malden and Lynn. Winthrop remained at Charlestown, whither he removed the seat of government from Salem, much to the regret of the people of the latter place. They had hoped to make Salem the metropolis—"the source of trade,

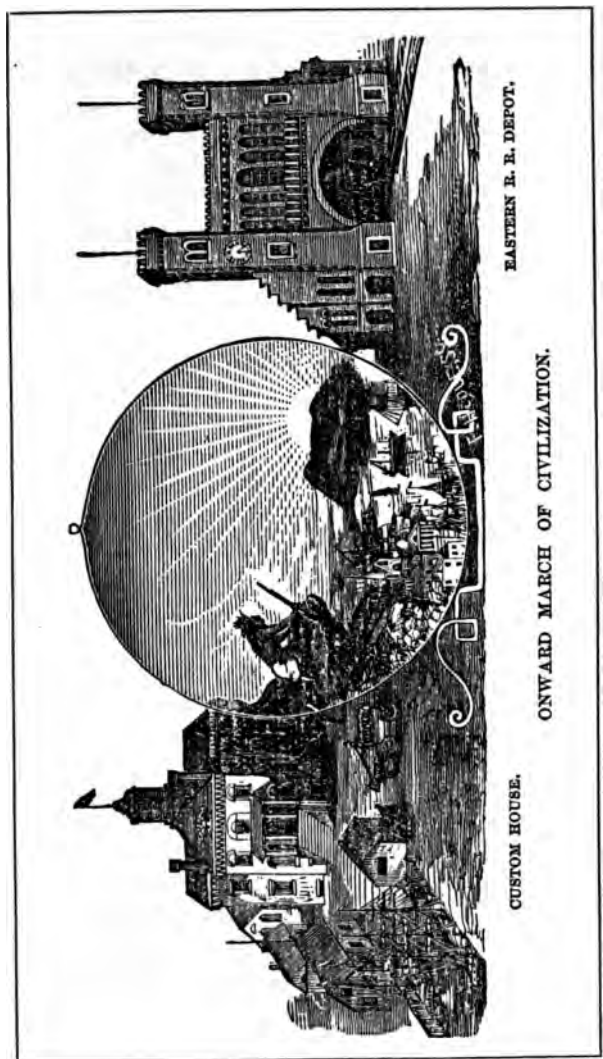
¹ Bancroft, vol. I, p. 230.

wealth, law and influence," — and the transfer of the seat of government deeply touched their pride. But feeling that the public welfare demanded the sacrifice they "waived all for the greater public benefit, and bowed in submission and continued their efforts to advance the common weal."

The removal of the capital from Salem did not check its growth, which continued slowly but surely until in 1637 it numbered nearly a thousand inhabitants. It was a miniature republic, where the people met on a common level, and, consulting together on the public good, made their own laws and chose their own ministers, and elders, and teachers. They did not ask the assent of the King to any of their acts. They did not recognize him in any way as their ruler. Feeling themselves to be a free people, they governed themselves accordingly. So it may be said that the settlement of Salem, as a permanent town, was fully assured as early as the beginning of the year 1640. And its history from that day forth has been emblematic of its name — Salem, or *peace*. Few cities or towns in the country, dating their origin as early as Salem, have been so little stirred by Indian depredations, or wars, or social revolutions. Only once, on the occasion of the terrible witchcraft delusion, has Salem's peace been disturbed, and then it was short and sharp like some horrid nightmare.

The territory comprised in the town of Salem at this time was much greater than at present. It included all of the present city of Salem, and the towns of Marblehead, Beverly, Manchester, Wen-

ham, Danvers, Peabody, and part of Middleton and Topsfield. These various towns were detached as follows: Wenham, May 10, 1643; Manchester, May 14, 1645; Marblehead, May 2, 1649; Topsfield, Oct. 18, 1650; Beverly, Oct. 14, 1668; Middleton, June 20, 1728; Danvers, June 16, 1757. The last named was subsequently divided into Danvers and South Danvers, and then the name of the latter was changed to Peabody.



SALEM—PAST AND PRESENT.

CHAPTER I.

PRESENT GENERAL DESCRIPTION.—THE LANDING PLACE OF CO-
NANT.—SOUTH RIVER.—THE FIRST WHARVES.—PRESENT AND
PAST MODE OF TRAVELLING.—SWEET'S COVE.—THE SECOND
MILL IN SALEM.—THE FIRST CUSTOM HOUSE.—THE FIRST
FOURTH OF JULY CELEBRATION IN AMERICA.—WASHINGTON
STREET.—THE MARSTON BUILDING.—THE HENFIELD HOUSE.—
THE HOME OF FRANCIS HIGGINSON AND OF ROGER WILLIAMS.
—THE MOTHER OF CHURCHES.—THE HOUSE WHERE WASHING-
TON WAS ENTERTAINED.—THE FIRST TOWN HOUSE.—THE SEC-
OND TOWN HOUSE, WHERE WITCHES WERE TRIED.—THE THIRD
TOWN AND COURT HOUSE.—SCENES OF THRILLING INTEREST.
THE HAWTHORNE TOWN PUMP.—THE LAST TOWN AND COURT
HOUSE.—WASHINGTON'S VISIT TO SALEM.—CITY HALL.—THE
CITY GOVERNMENT.—MAYORS OF SALEM.—ABSTRACT FROM
MAYOR WILLIAMS' ADDRESS.

A GRAND old town. Ancient streets, ancient
buildings, ancient family names, and a linger-
ing of ancient customs. A commercial and
literary city on Massachusetts Bay, in the
south-easterly section of Essex county, sixteen miles
north-east of Boston. Its people more like the solid
people of old England than can elsewhere be found
on the western continent. The topographical forma-
tion of its principal portion a narrow peninsula, not
half a mile in width at its widest part, extending in
a north-easterly direction out toward the sea, and
terminating in two headlands¹ divided by Collins'
Cove. On its northerly side North river, dividing

¹ The eastern of these headlands is "Salem Neck," and the west-
ern is the territory over which Bridge street extends to Beverly.

North Salem from the city proper. On its southerly side South river, dividing the city proper from South Salem. Such is the general description of Salem.

Surprising to say, no complete history of this ancient town has yet been written. The material, however, for one is safely stored in its public institutions, waiting to be worked into systematic form by the first writer of ability who shall consider it worth his while to undertake the task. Our object is merely that of relating such matters of interest, to visitors or residents, as present themselves upon the surface, hoping to create a greater interest in the many beauties of nature and of art with which Salem is favored, and thereby lay the foundation for a more elaborate history at, as we trust, no far distant day.

At the Eastern Railway depot, near the dividing line between South Salem and Salem proper, we meet our reader friends. With them we purpose to stroll about the city so as to utilize our time in the most economical manner. As we proceed we desire to call their attention briefly to portions of the history of its past, refer to the lives of some of Salem's many distinguished sons, both native and adopted, and point out the places of interest, and show the wonderful changes produced by time and the energies of man.

Regarding the landing place of Roger Conant and his companions, when they forsook Cape Ann in 1626 and came to this place, there has been some confliction of opinion. Some writers have claimed that Conant came up the north shore, kept well in

near the land, and entered what is now Beverly harbor; that he landed on a metamorphic rock lying just west of the Salem end of Beverly bridge. The best authorities, among whom is Wm. P. Upham, Esq., of this city, claim that the landing was made on the northern side of South river, some two or three hundred rods east of the depot, near what is now the foot of Elm street. Mr. Upham has devoted much time and labor in his researches of these matters, relying more upon the evidence of records than upon fanciful theories, and his view is almost universally accepted.

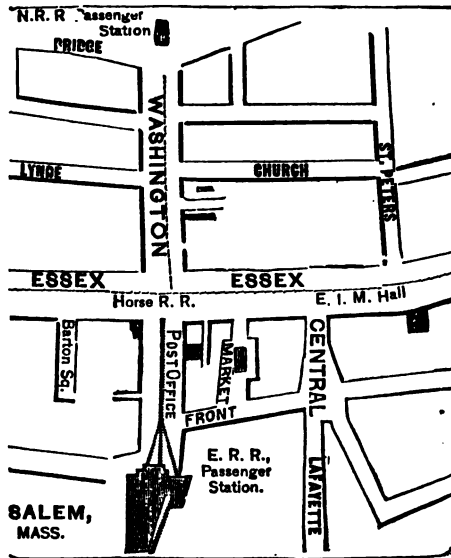
Conant and his companions were styled planters, and are supposed, therefore, to have been cultivators of the soil. It is certain, however, that some of them were fishermen and some mechanics. Ten years previous to their landing a distemper had raged among the Indians and had greatly depopulated this region, so that the planters had little to fear from the few remaining Indians whose lives had been spared. They, therefore, as their numbers increased, spread out over the vast territory surrounding them, waiting for occupancy and possession.

"These men who sought this far-off nook and corner of the world, crossing a tempestuous and dangerous ocean and landing on the shores of a wilderness, leaving everything however dear and valuable behind, came to have a country and a social system for themselves and of themselves alone. Their resolve was inexorable, not to suffer dissent, or any discordant element, to get foothold among

them. They had sacrificed all to find and to make a country for themselves, and they meant to keep it to themselves. They had gone out of everybody else's way and they did not mean to let anybody else come into their way. These men did not understand the great truth which Hugh Peters preached to Parliament. 'Why,' said he, 'cannot Christians differ and yet be friends? All children should be fed, though they have different faces and shapes; unity, not uniformity, is the Christian word.'" The only consistent or solid foundation on which a Republic, or a church, can be built is an absolute level, with no enclosures and no exclusions.

From copies of court papers, in a communication by Wm. P. Upham, Esq., to the "Essex Institute Historical Collections," Vol. 8, we learn that the first settlement after the arrival of Endicott was in what is now Washington street and its neighborhood.

South river originally extended up to and around old Castle Hill, which can be seen from the southern end of the depot. It was a beautiful stream, bordered on each side of its winding course by wooded shores. On its placid waters, even where the depot now stands, have reposed the many noted ships of the golden past, mastered by navigators whose records make glorious the history of our early commerce. Also on its waters have rested those ships in which were transported across the briny billows the richest products of the Indies, to make glad the hearts of the many whose interests were connected therewith. Their successes made Salem what she has been in the past, and largely



LOCATION OF THE FIRST SETTLEMENT.

(SEE PAGES 5 AND 26).

what she is at the present time. South river bears hardly a semblance of its original form when it was unobstructed by the long wharves which have nearly severed it in twain, or the more recent "fillings in" which have succeeded in destroying its beauty. What is left of the upper part of this stream, near Castle Hill, is now known as the Mill Pond. Its ebb and flow are through a conduit running in a north-easterly direction, under Mill and Washington streets, and the south-eastern portion of the Eastern Railroad property, to what is left of the lower portion of the old river.

The first wharves were built on the northern bank of South river, and as late as 1760, nearly a century and a half from the first landing, there were but eleven in all. Two of these were constructed at the foot of School-house lane (now Washington street), on a portion of the spot now occupied by the centre of the stone depot; a third was about where the centre of the Arrington building (opposite the depot) now is; a fourth, midway between School-house lane and Town landing (now Lafayette street); a fifth was at the Town landing, and four others between that point and Burying-point lane (now Liberty street). A few rods below this was the tenth wharf, while the eleventh was at the foot of Turner's lane (now Turner street). The most of these wharves are in existence to-day, but the land has been so filled in between them that they now form the shore-wall to little more than the course of the old channel of the river. These facts all tend to show that the early commerce of

Salem was carried on in the vicinity of Washington street. The old South river at this point, has been supplanted by the railroad, and the white-winged wards of old ocean by the giants of steam, that now hourly deposit their burdens of life and treasure upon the site of two of the most noted wharves of the days gone by.

The Eastern Railroad was opened in 1838, and extended only from Salem to Boston. Many of our readers may remember the old wooden depot built over the water on one of the wharves which occupied the site of the present Eastern depot; also its cupola, and its bell which was rung at the approach of each train by the eccentric old "Corporal" Pitman, who declared that he could "always tell when any one else was ringing that bell, by its sound." Among other things related of the "Corporal," the most amusing is the attempt that he once made to lift himself in a basket.

The old depot was a dark, dingy affair, whose walls and timbers when taken down were blackened by the soot from the wood-burning engines. In striking contrast with the old depot is the present substantial stone edifice,¹ with its enlarged dimensions and increased accommodations.

Previous to 1838 lumbering stage coaches, or private vehicles, were the only conveyances by land from this place. Travellers are now provided with gorgeous palace and drawing-room cars, furnished with velvet-cushioned reclining chairs and couches,

¹ See page 22.

dressing and dining rooms, and everything appertaining to comfort. By coach it took at least three hours to travel over an old-fashioned road from Salem to Boston, but now

"You may ride in an hour or two if you will,
From Halibut Point¹ to Beacon Hill,²
With the sea beside you all the way,
Through the pleasant places that skirt the bay;
.

All this you watch idly, and more by far
From the cushioned seat of a railway car.
But in days of witchcraft it was not so;—
City bound travellers had to go
Horseback over a blind, rough road,
Or as part of a jolting wagon load
Of garden-produce and household goods,
Crossing the fords, half lost in the woods,
By wolves and red-skins frightened all day,
And the roar of lions, some histories say.
If a craft for Boston were setting sail,
Very few of a passage would fail
Who had trading to do in the three-hilled town;
For they *might* return ere the sun was down."³

The following is a well-drawn picture of the accommodations afforded travellers in the early part of the present century :

"The carriages were old, and the shackling and much of the harness made of ropes. One pair of horses carried us eighteen miles. We generally reached our resting place for the night, if no accident intervened, at ten o'clock, and after a frugal supper, went to bed with a notice that we should be called at three, next morning — which generally proved to be half-past two. Then whether it snowed

¹ Cape Ann.

² Boston.

³ Peggy Bligh's Voyage.

or rained, the traveller must rise and make ready by the help of a horn-lantern and a farthing candle, and proceed on his way, over bad roads,—sometimes with a driver showing no doubtful symptoms of drunkenness, which good-hearted passengers never failed to improve at every stopping place, by urging upon him the comfort of another glass of toddy. Thus we travelled eighteen miles a stage, sometimes obliged to get out and help the coachman lift the coach out of a quagmire or rut, and arrived at New York after a week's hard travelling, wondering at the ease as well as the expedition with which our journey was effected."

The entire land occupied for and about the Eastern depot is "made land;" as is also Creek street, west of the depot, so named because of supplanting a creek there situated, which extended from the river about where the Eastern Railway freight depot now stands on Mill street, westwardly to near the corner of Summer and Chestnut streets. It was early known as Sweet's cove, subsequently as Ruck's creek, taking its name from the owners of the land upon the north of it.

To the south of this creek and south-west of the depot are four acres of land, which, in 1630, were laid out to Samuel Skelton, first pastor of the First Church. To the south of Skelton's land is other land which was early known as "Governor's Field," in remembrance of which Endicott street is now named. The Governor's Field and a portion of Skelton's land afterwards came into the possession of John Pickering.

On the northern side of Mill street, almost di-



THE PRESENT FIRST CHURCH.

(SEE PAGE 41.)

rectly over the conduit, stands the round-house of the Eastern Railroad. The site it occupies is that of the second mill built in Salem. The history of the building of this mill furnishes us with the history of the "made land."

About the middle of the seventeenth century, Walter Price and others, for the better "grindage" of corn, were granted the privilege of building a new grist mill on the banks of South river. The site selected was where the railroad round-house is, from which spot the old "city mills" were removed at the time of building the conduit. John and Jonathan Pickering, sons of the John Pickering previously spoken of, carried on the business of ship-building above this point on their father's land. They objected to the mill as "damming up the channel or river below their land, and hindering them from coming up by water to said land, or improving it for a building place for vessels." Pickering, on this complaint, brought action against the Mill Company. At the same time the company brought action against Pickering for "damage to them by pulling up the stakes that the mill-wright had set down for placing the mill, and throwing part of their timber into the river by night, and endeavoring after the mill was set down to turn it into the channel by night to their great damage," etc. These actions were tried together and resulted in the jury finding for the proprietors of the mill. The mill was therefore built, and the ship-building transferred to the creek, where quite a village of shipwrights gathered and formed what was known as

Ruck's village. The erection of this mill resulted in the building of a new road to Marblehead, over South river. It comprised what is now Summer, High, Mill, and Lafayette streets. Previous to this time the road to Marblehead passed around on the western side of South river (now Mill pond) and so over Forest river. In 1686 a highway was laid from the head of Norman's Lane (now Norman street, north-west of the depot) across the creek to the mill. This, together with that portion which extends to Lafayette street, is now Mill street. A bridge was built across the creek, and W. P. Upham, Esq., says: "the tradition is, that vessels were built on the Cove (or creek) as far up as the upper end of Creek street, and that the bridge was a swing bridge so that they could pass out into the river."

The first building which seems to have been used as a Custom House was situated on South river, near the head of this creek. This building was known as the "Port House." The site is now covered by the north-western portion of the Eastern Railroad property. The "French house," situated on the corner of Gedney court, was built in 1645 and succeeded the "Port House." It is said to have been occupied as a Custom House for thirty-four years. Felt says: "For a long period, it was usual for collectors of the customs here to transact their business where they resided. This gave rise to a common remark of our sea-captains, 'we do not know where to find the custom house on our return.'"

On the South river, where the depot now stands, the first assembling of boats, or canoes, in Salem

took place in 1636. All canoes on the northerly side of the town were ordered to be brought "to a point opposite the common landing place of the North river, by George Harris' house; those on the south side to be brought before the 'Port House,' on the South river, at the same time, then and there to be viewed by a board of surveyors, consisting of J. Holgrave, Peter Palfray, R. Waterman, Roger Conant and P. Veren, or a majority of them." It was decided that no canoe should be used (under a penalty of forty shillings) except such as should be allowed and sealed by the above board of surveyors. It was also publicly proclaimed that if any should neglect or refuse to bring their canoes to the above appointed places at the time specified for examination, they should forfeit and pay the sum of ten shillings.

The exclusion at that early day of many forms of amusements being carried to such a degree, the people gladly obeyed the summons for a gathering and made it, no doubt, a gala-day for Salem. Hon. C. W. Upham says:—"A light, graceful and most picturesque fleet swarmed from all directions to the appointed rendezvous. The harbor glittered with the flashing paddles, and was the scene of swift races and rival feats of skill, displaying manly strength and agility." This, the *first regatta* in Salem harbor, must have been an aquatic spectacle of rare gayety and beauty. It occurred on the fourth of July. It may, therefore, be considered the first fourth of July Celebration in America.

These canoes were "dug-outs" made of "whole

pine trees about two foot and a half over and twenty feet long." They were used for transporting passengers to North and South Salem, before the days of bridges, and in them they sometimes went fowling "two leagues to sea."

That portion of Washington street which extends east of the depot into South Salem, is the most recent of the made territory in this vicinity. So recent was the change, that but for the future it might remain unmentioned by us. The row of wooden buildings, including the Arrington Building, on the eastern side of Washington street, originally extended from the north-eastern corner of the depot to Front street, about on a line with the outer edge of the present brick walk, on the eastern side of the depot. These buildings were moved back to their present position, when Washington street was extended, in 1873. This great improvement created a new route for the South Salem Branch of the Horse Railroad, which originally passed through Front to Lafayette street, and over the bridge. On Washington street opposite the south-eastern corner of the depot, stands Flint's building, occupied by the 1st District Court (Judge J. B. F. Osgood), in the second story, and by the Salem Mechanic Infantry, Co. K, of the 8th Mass. Regt., as an armory, in the third story. Previous to the establishment of District Courts, local offenders were tried before Judge J. G. Waters of the Police Court (now abolished), at the Police Station on Front street.

Washington street, from the depot to North river, is a broad thoroughfare extending up an elevation

of some 30 feet, to where it crosses Essex street, the main street of the city; thence running on a level about 900 feet, it falls again, but more abruptly, to about the grade of the railroad. Under the elevated portions of this street is the Eastern Railroad tunnel, built in 1839, and at that time considered a great accomplishment and wonder. This tunnel was originally lighted by apertures, at intervals in the centre of Washington street. These apertures were surrounded by iron railings with a street-lamp over each. The smoke arising so suddenly from these places, frightened the horses passing upon the street, and caused some damage. They were accordingly first boarded over, and finally more securely covered, and the railings removed. The tunnel now is totally dark, excepting the light which it receives from the entrances, which is of no benefit to trains passing through. Although a double track extends from Boston to Ipswich on the Eastern road, yet this tunnel has never been enlarged nor altered from its original construction. Two sets of rails, however, to avoid some switching, are laid through it—one for the main road, the other for the Lawrence branch.

Washington street is next, if not fully equal, to Essex street, in business importance. On it are situated the Post-office, District Court, two Savings Banks, all the National Banks but two, several mercantile and lawyers' offices, and numerous stores and dwellings. It contains more of the principal modern buildings than any street in the city. Among these might be named, City Hall, Eastern Railroad



CITY HALL.

(SEE PAGE 52.)

depot, Asiatic Building, Flint's Building, Holyoke Building, Northey's Building, First Church Building, Price's Block, and the Stone Court House (fronting on Federal street).

Washington street in the early days was known as School-house lane. It extended from North to South rivers where these two bodies of water came nearest together. It was selected as the proper place for the beginning of the settlement, doubtless on account of the favorable means of defence against the Indians, here provided. Both North and South rivers, as well as the before-mentioned creek, could be easily guarded from this point, as also the eighth of a mile of land between the creek and North river.

Our reader visitors in passing up Washington street from the depot, will be strongly impressed with the irregular appearance of the four corners at the junction of Essex and Washington streets. They never formed a perfect square, as Essex street above and below this point was formerly two distinct streets. Washington street was originally four rods in width its entire length. But when the railroad tunnel was constructed in 1839, this street from Essex street to the depot, was widened on the eastern side, and took in the gore of land on which Brown & Rust's brick store and the "Henfield house" stood, and the land on which stood a three-story building, known as the Marston building, together with a *narrow* lane bounding these estates on the east, and running from Essex to Front streets. The outside edge of the present sidewalk on the

eastern side of the tunnel, marks very nearly the original eastern line of Washington street.

The old "State House" formerly occupied the site of Brown & Rust's store. It was located fronting Essex street, and facing the present Stearns' Building. The Henfield House, supposed to have been built in 1650, stood south of the brick store. It was formerly the residence of Sergeant Hilliard Veren. Wm. P. Upham, Esq., locates it as "east of where the tunnel is now, and 65 feet south of the cap-stone." Veren was one of the early settlers, and was the first collector of this port, of whom we have any knowledge. He was elected to that office by the legislature in 1663.

The Marston building stood nearly opposite the present western terminus of Front street. It was occupied in part, within the memory of the oldest inhabitant, by the late Samuel R. Hodges as a West India Goods store, and subsequently by Merritt & Ashby. Mr. David Merritt, the senior member of this firm, was the founder of the express and transportation business in this city, which since his decease has been carried on by his son David. For more than half a century father and son have successively served the public in a most acceptable and faithful manner. The upper part of the Marston building was used by the late Daniel Hammond, for the purpose of cleaning gum copal, large quantities of which were transported from Zanzibar and the west-coast of Africa by the late N. L. Rogers and Brothers and Robert Brookhouse.

On the eastern side of the *narrow* lane above al-

luded to, now the eastern side of Washington street, was the home of the Rev. Francis Higginson. Higginson's house stood on the land now covered by the south-eastern portion of the Asiatic Building. Its front was towards the South river. Higginson died in 1680, just one year after his arrival at Naumkeag. Afterwards Roger Williams occupied the house and resided there when acting as the assistant of the Rev. Samuel Skelton. It was here, and at this time, that he first promulgated his liberal religious doctrines.

The Lawrence distillery, afterward used by Mr. David Merritt as a stable, stood fifty years ago on the corner of Washington and Front streets, where the Lawrence block now stands. On land partly covered by the Asiatic Building, was a building occupied for many years as a restaurant, by the famous "Jameson." Between this place and the First Church edifice, stood the house of the old fire engine "Alert." The "Alert" was one of the oldest fire engines in this city.

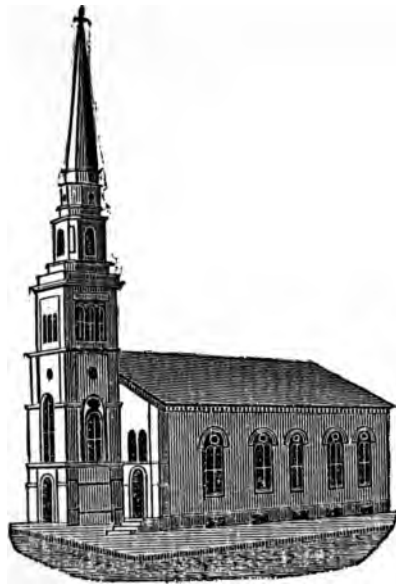
On the corner of Washington and Essex streets, the edifice of the First Church stands. It is the mother of all the churches, not only in Salem, but of this immediate neighborhood. Though not the first body of assembled worshippers, it was the first church regularly organized in America. It was established in 1629. Since then there have been four church buildings, all situated on the site of the present edifice. The frame of the first meeting-house, now preserved as a relic of the past, stands in the rear of Plummer Hall in a good state of

preservation. We will visit it as we pass through that portion of the city. The First Church, during the 248 years of its existence, has been blessed with pastors nearly all of whom have been leaders in the denomination. As a proof of this it is only necessary to mention the names of such divines as Francis and John Higginson, Samuel Skelton, Roger Williams, Hugh Peters, Nicholas Noyes, Geo. Curwen, Samuel Fiske, John Sparhawk, Thos. Barnard, John Prince, Chas. W. Upham, Thos. T. Stone, Geo. W. Briggs, James T. Hewes, and the present pastor, Fielder Israel. The present edifice was built in 1826, at a cost of \$18,125. In 1874 extensive alterations were made in it. The whole interior, as well as the exterior, of the building was remodelled and beautified. The stores under the church on Essex street were enlarged and modernized, and are to-day occupied by Mr. John P. Peabody, one of our most successful dry and fancy goods dealers, and Mr. Daniel Low. Accommodations on Washington street were made for the National Exchange Bank. The entire building was reconstructed in a manner to make the corner where it stands, architecturally beautiful. We have presented a fine picture of this building for the inspection of our readers.

On the western side of Washington street, about where Dr. Fiske's house now stands, stood the two-story brick house of Joshua Ward, in which George Washington was entertained for the night, when on his northern visit in 1789. At an exhibition of antique articles, given at Plummer Hall, December, 1875, Mrs. E. Putnam exhibited the plate from

which Washington dined, and Mr. R. C. Manning exhibited the damask drapery, from the hangings on the bed in which he slept at that time. The same drapery ornamented the bed occupied by General Lafayette, when he visited Salem a few years earlier. From the fact that Washington stopped in this place, the name of this street from Essex street, south, was afterwards changed to Washington street. Its original name, that of School-house lane, had long since been discarded, and it had been known as Town-house lane.

A little to the North of the site of the Ward house, on what is now the south-eastern portion of Dr. Morse's estate, stood the first Town House of which we have any record. Felt locates it "on the west side of Washington street, several rods south of Essex street." The date of the building of this edifice, which was of the early style of architecture, is not now known. The records show, however, that it needed repairs in 1655. It is probable that the sessions of the Quarterly Courts were held here in 1636, and if so, the King's arms were affixed by order of the General Court, to the wood-work over the judges' bench, as the insignia of royal authority over the Commonwealth. This hall was the ancient place for municipal and judicial assemblages; cases were tried here before the Court that were quite common in those days, but which would now be deemed absurd. For instance:—men were arraigned for wearing long hair and great boots, and women for wearing large sleeves, lace, tiffany, and such things as were prohibited by the Puritan rulers. Baptists and Quakers



TABERNACLE CHURCH.

(SEE PAGE 78.)

were obliged to defend themselves before the bar of justice, for absence from worship in the Congregational meeting-house. Scolding women and profane men were sentenced to have their tongues placed in cleft sticks, or have a three-fold ducking. Other transgressors were doomed for a period to be confined in cages, or fastened in stocks in public places, and lovers even were fined for showing signs of their love, without the consent of their parents.

The second Town House was "set up by the prison" in 1674. Ex-Mayor Williams, in his admirable address at the dedication of the City Hall extension, in 1876, locates this spot as "south-west of the First Meeting House," which would be, as near as we can learn, just south of Hilliard Veren's house. The prison was afterwards removed to near the site of the first Town House, and, in 1677, the second Town House was moved from the above described site to the north, about in the middle of School, now Washington street, nearest perhaps to the western side and north-west of the present City Hall, nearly in front of the Brookhouse estate. The upper part was fitted up a few years later for judicial purposes. In 1702 the Queen's arm, in honor of the "Good Queen Anne," who had ascended to the throne, was placed over the seat of justice. This building was noted for the anxious discussions within it, of the questions of servile obedience to the commissioners of the profligate Charles II; of surrendering our revered charter and submitting to the tyrannical rule of Sir Edmund Andros, the Governor General of New England under James II. Also as the place

where innocent victims of delusion were charged with the crime of witchcraft, and a number of them sentenced to suffer the extreme penalty of the law. "Seldom" says Felt, "can descriptions, either of political or judicial character, be drawn in bolder relief of truth, than those which veritably apply to this ancient edifice. Credible tradition relates that the building connected with such prominent events, stood over twenty years after its successor was erected. The lower part of it served for a school, while the floor of the old court room above was mostly taken up, except where the seats of the judges and juries were located. Here the boys would sometimes collect before master came, and play over the scene, once acted there in dread reality, of trying witches."

The third Town and Court House, was erected about 1720, on Essex street, next to, and west of the First Church building. The second story was used for judicial, and the lower for municipal purposes. It was also used as a place of exchange, where men collected and transacted business. "It had a long bench in front," says Felt, "which seldom wanted occupants when people were abroad." Here the events of the day were talked over, public questions discussed, and not unlikely scandal retailed. A recital of all the scenes which occurred in this building would be of the most thrilling interest. Here the Stamp Act, was denounced; the address, issued by the Massachusetts Legislature rallying the colonies to resist parliamentary taxation, was justified; interference with the right of trial by jury in the admiralty court, and the military

despotism of the British soldiers in the Province, were censured. Here too, did the patriot sons of 1770, resolve neither to import nor purchase goods subject to crown duties; decision in favor of the first Continental Congress was here made by the House of Representatives, in 1774, and our proportion of its delegates designated for the most efficient resistance to British encroachments; the wrong of closing the port of Boston, and the need which its oppressed inhabitants had for sympathetic aid and relief, were eloquently discussed. It was in this building that the legislature of Massachusetts convened, and where in order to finish the preparations for the overthrow of British rule in America, they frustrated the design of Governor Gage of declaring their dissolution. They locked their chamber door, thus preventing the Governor's secretary from delivering his message. On the seventh day of October, 1774, contrary to the proclamation of the Governor, the sturdy patriots formed themselves here, into a provincial congress, John Hancock being chosen chairman, to regulate the disordered state of the colonies. They then adjourned to Concord, where they won imperishable renown.

When the General Court was transferred from Boston to Salem this Town House, in which its sessions were held, was called the "State House," by which name we have previously referred to it, so that this memorable building was at the same time used as the Town House, the Court House and the State House. It was painted (white), a rarity in those days, and was supplied with a bell in the cupola.

In 1774, it had a very narrow escape from a great fire which occurred in Salem.

On the edge of the old sidewalk, west of this building and where the eastern wall of the present Eastern Railroad tunnel now is, stood the "old Town Pump," immortalized by our great literary genius, Nathaniel Hawthorne, in his quaint sketch entitled "A Rill From the Town Pump," commencing:—

"Noon by the north clock! Noon by the east! High noon, too, by these hot sunbeams, which fall scarcely aslope, upon my head, and almost make the water bubble and smoke under my nose."

At times, when the Town Houses were being repaired, or were torn down to be supplanted by new ones, the public business was transacted in some one of the meeting-houses. From 1774 to 1778, the public meetings were held in the First Church meeting-house, and many of the most interesting matters relating to the Revolution, were there discussed, and many important resolutions passed. In 1785 we learn that the public business was transacted at Joshua Ward's store, in the basement of the building in which Washington stopped four years later.

Standing at the junction of Essex and Washington streets, and looking to the north, we can see the parapet marking the northern end of the tunnel. In front of this parapet, in the middle of Washington street, where Federal street crosses it, the fourth and last combined Town and Court House was located. It occupied the site of an old brick school-house, from which this street took its original name of School-house lane. This Town and Court House

stood with its front towards Essex street, and its west side facing the site of the present Tabernacle Church. It was erected in 1786, and the name of that portion of Washington street, north of Essex, was soon after changed to Court street. This building was two stories high, 62 feet long and 36 $\frac{1}{2}$ feet wide. It cost \$7,145.¹ Its walls were of brick, and upon its roof was a cupola. On its front or southern end was a balustrade, opening into the second story, and supported by Tuscan pillars. Under the balustrade were wide stone steps which led through a door into the lower hall. This hall was used for public assemblies, and for the exercising of military companies. On the east side of the hall were several offices. The court room was in the second story, and the "Massachusetts Magazine" of 1790, remarked of it: "The court hall is said to be the best constructed room, for the holding of courts, of any in the Commonwealth." The architecture of this building was very much admired. It was the work of Mr. Samuel McIntire of this city. From the balustrade above mentioned, Washington was presented to a congregated mass of our people when, in 1789, he visited this city. Here many a kindling eye first caught the glance of his form, which enshrined those noble excellences of head and heart, that largely contributed to free our soil from mighty invaders, and lay the foundation of our national freedom and fame.

¹ Half of this amount was paid by the county, and the other half by the town.



PRESENT COURT HOUSE.

(SEE PAGE 83.)

Washington's visit was long remembered by our fathers as one of the happiest with which they were ever favored. So recent was the victorious struggle for liberty, in which this man had acted so noble a part, that the people were overwhelmed with joy at his presence, and he saw them under the most favorable circumstances. The greatest endeavors were made to pay him deserved homage. He was presented to the selectmen, on Main street (now Essex), where, in the presence of a great multitude, composed of the military, the civic bodies, and the school children, their Quaker chairman, William Northey, with his hat on, took him by the hand and said: "Friend Washington, we are glad to see thee, and, in behalf of the inhabitants, bid thee welcome to Salem."

Washington made a strong and pertinent reply, closing as follows:—"From your own industry and enterprise you have everything to hope, that deserving men and good citizens can expect. May your navigation and commerce, your industry in all its applications, be rewarded; your happiness here, be as perfect as belongs to the lot of humanity, and your eternal felicity be complete."

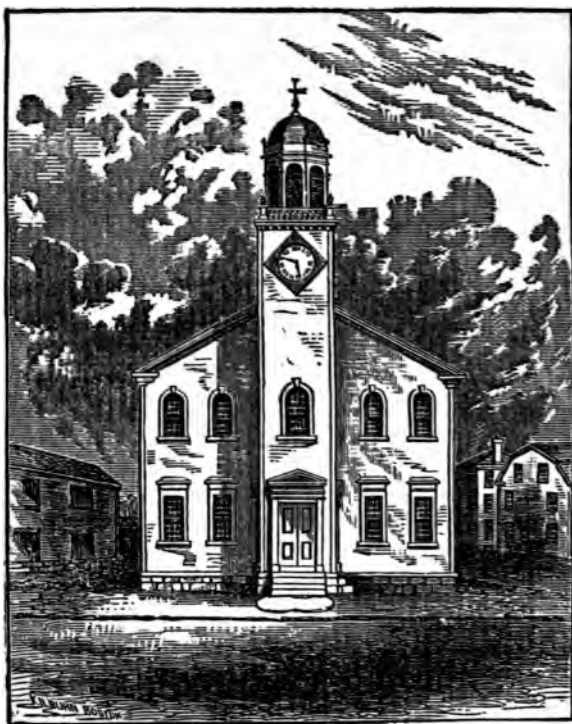
When the present Town Hall was built in Derby square, in 1817, the town disposed of its share in the fourth Town and Court House to the county, for \$1823.10. The lower story was then made fire-proof for the preservation of judicial papers, and the court room was made more commodious. For this improvement the county expended \$6,071.28. This old Court House stood until 1839, when it was taken down to make room for the passage of the railroad.

The railroad corporation allowed the county for the demolition of this edifice, \$3,300.

The City Hall, on the east side of Washington street, on land formerly of Josiah Orne, was erected in 1838, and the expense defrayed from Salem's portion of the surplus revenue, in the United States' Treasury. This revenue, which had accumulated to the amount of \$40,000,000, was distributed among all the towns and cities of the country, in proportion to the number of their inhabitants. Salem received for her share \$33,843.40. The City Hall has brick sides with a granite front, and is two stories high. It was originally 68 feet long, 41½ feet high, and 32 feet wide, and cost \$23,000. Under the administration of Mayor Williams in 1876, it was enlarged to double its original length, and a fire-proof vault provided, for the preservation of valuable papers. The offices were changed about, and all the departments of the city government accommodated under its roof, which had never before been the case.

The city was incorporated, March 23, 1836, and on the 9th of May following, in the Tabernacle Church, the city government was organized. Hon. Leverett Saltonstall was the first Mayor, and served two terms. Near the close of his second term, on the evening of May 31, 1838, City Hall was first occupied. Since then our city councils, noted for the high moral standing and culture of their members, have regularly met therein and discussed and acted upon the local questions of the hour. They have been led in succession by the ability and wisdom of Leverett Saltonstall, Stephen C. Phillips, Stephen

P. Webb, Joseph S. Cabot, Nathaniel Silsbee, jr., David Pingree, Chas. W. Upham, Ashael Huntington, Joseph Andrews, Wm. S. Messervy, Stephen G. Wheatland, Joseph B. F. Osgood, David Roberts, Wm. Cogswell, Nathaniel Brown, Samuel Calley, Henry L. Williams, and Henry K. Oliver. Of these gentlemen, several won more than mere mayoralty distinction. Saltonstall was a State Senator, member of Congress, and author of "A Historical Sketch of Haverhill." Phillips served in both branches of the Legislature, was a member of Congress, and, in 1848-9, was the Free-soil candidate for governor. Upham served in both branches of the legislature, was President of the State Senate, a member of Congress, and as author of "Salem Witchcraft," "Life of Timothy Pickering," and other valuable works, gained a world-wide reputation. Huntington was clerk of Courts in Essex county, for many years. Cogswell served during the entire recent war, was a brigadier general, and was with Gen. Sherman in his great march from Atlanta to the sea. Oliver was adjutant general 1844-48. Subsequently was State Treasurer under Gov. Andrew, was Mayor of Lawrence, Chief of the State Bureau of Labor, Labor Reform Candidate for Governor, and agent of the State Board of Education. He is also widely known as author of many musical compositions, and was a member of the board of judges at the Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia, in 1876. Among the other mayors were men of marked ability, whose disinclination only, prevented them from occupying positions of higher honors.



OLD NORTH CHURCH.

(SEE PAGE 85.)

The address on the occasion of the dedication of the City Hall extension was delivered by His Honor, the Mayor, Henry L. Williams. From it we copy the following, showing the progress Salem has made since the hall was first erected :—

“The population of our city has increased, since this hall was built thirty-eight years ago, from 15,000 to 26,000; the valuation of taxable property from \$8,000,000 to \$26,000,000; receipts by the treasurer, from \$63,000 to \$800,000; payments, from \$66,000 to \$805,000; items, in number, paid by the treasurer during the year, from 654 to 7,008; tax levied \$44,000 to \$452,000; interest, from \$1700 to \$92,000. City debt, \$37,000 at commencement of city government to \$1,267,000 at the present time.

The commercial character of our city, it is true, has changed essentially from what it was thirty-eight years ago. The time was when Salem stood sixth in rank among the commercial places in America. Thirty-eight years ago Salem ships floated on every sea, and brought to our wharves the products of every clime; this being their home and where many of them were built, their repairs and their outfits, gave to the sea-side of Salem a business-like appearance.

For a long series of years the East India trade was carried on from here to a greater extent than from any other port in the United States. Now has come the change. The building of the railroad and the telegraph, has swept from the smallest ports in our country, to its great commercial centres, the foreign trade that they formerly enjoyed.

This change has caused an almost entire disappearance from our harbor of Salem ships, but we have, in their place, an important provincial and coastwise traffic, employing, as will be seen by the

following facts obtained from the Custom House records, about double the tonnage of thirty-eight years ago.

In 1838, there arrived at Salem, from foreign and coastwise ports, vessels measuring about 120,000 tons. In the year ending April, 1872, there arrived 249,216 tons, and last year (since the change in the Reciprocity Treaty) only 150,098 tons; the number of vessels falling off from 1812, in the year ending April, 1872, to 1197 vessels in the year 1875,—about one-third part."

The present city council is composed of six aldermen and twenty-four common councilmen. The school committee consists of eighteen regularly elected members, and Mayor and president of the common council, ex-officio. The former meets semi-monthly and the latter monthly. Henry M. Meek, City Clerk, and Henry J. Cross, City Treasurer, have held these offices for many years with great credit to themselves and to the city. William Mansfield, the veteran City Messenger, now eighty years of age, has held his present office ever since Salem became a city, a period of over forty years, and, until the summer of 1876, never missed a meeting of either branch of the city government. He occupied a similar position under the old town organization for a number of years.

CHAPTER II.

HUGH PETERS AND ROGER WILLIAMS.—THE GREAT TAVERN.—SOCIAL EVENING CLUB.—COUNT RUMFORD.—KIRWAN'S LIBRARY.—WATCH-HOUSES AND WATCHMEN.—HOMES OF PICKMAN, DERBY, NOYES AND SHARPE.—THE OLIVER MANSION.—BRIDGET BISHOP.—JUDGE WHITE.—LYCEUM HALL.—FIRST RESIDENCE OF GOV. ENDICOTT.—DANIEL EPPES.—AN HISTORIC CIRCLE.—FREE SCHOOLS.—TABERNACLE CHURCH.

THE lot of land south of City Hall comprising the north-eastern corner of Washington street, and now occupied by the Stearns' building, was originally owned by Hugh Peters.

Hugh Peters was a clergyman, politician and author. After imprisonment for non-conformity in England, he sailed for America, where he arrived in October, 1635. In December, 1636, he succeeded Roger Williams as pastor of the First Church in Salem. Roger Williams having become a non-conformist minister left the mother country four years prior to Peters, and in April, 1631, was chosen assistant to Rev. Mr. Skelton, the first minister of the First Church in Salem. Williams asserted at once his religious views of toleration, the independence of conscience of the civil magistrates, and the separation of Church and State. For this he was obliged, in a few months thereafter, to remove to Plymouth. In 1633, however, he returned to Salem, and became the successor of Skelton. His "new and dangerous opinions against the authority of magistrates," being asserted as then thought too

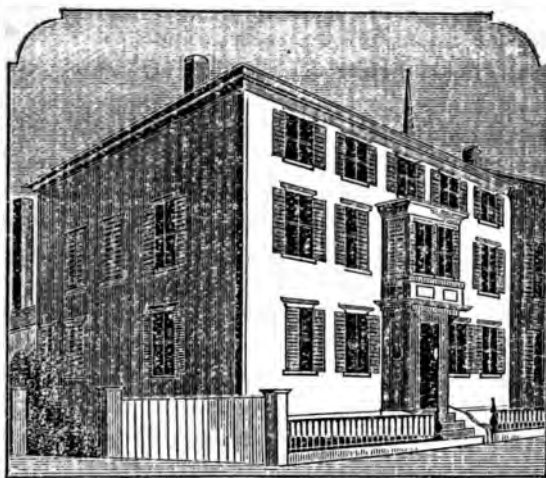
stronger, he was given better notice by members of the House of Commons, elected in the year 1655. Encouraged to remain in town till spring, he continued in preaching in the next month, and others were sent in January 1656 to seek him out and send him to England. He had, however, no intention of coming in the winter season through what was then a wilderness in Providence which had been founded. At the same time he maintained a friendly relation with the Indians and procured the settlement of Rhode Island. Hugh Peters in succeeding him in the ministry here, at once disavowed Williams' doctrine and recommended his adherents.

In 1657 Peters went to England to procure an alteration in the laws of taxes and trade with the country. As yet of Parliament nothing had been done. He was primarily influenced by him. He was a man of indomitable activity, always making improvements and starting enterprises, and he himself built houses and changed his residence from time to time when living here. There is some evidence that he at one time built a house near the corner of Washington and North streets, and that he varied his life in the single-ventured manner of John and Washington streets where the First Unitarian Church now is. When he was in England he sold his property in the hands of his secretary, Charles Gorton, and his return which he supposed would be in a short time, an expectation cherished by him to the end.

The battle of Worcester, 1651, put such a face upon the affairs of the mother country, that it seemed

probable that Mr. Peters' valuable services would be permanently needed there. Mr. Gott was therefore ordered to dispose of his property here. The estate on the north-eastern corner of Essex and Washington streets, where the Stearns' building is, was sold to Mr. John Orne, a carpenter, with the understanding that should Peters return he could repurchase the estate on the repayment "of all charges of buildings or otherways bestowed upon the said land." The original deed by which it was transferred to Orne is still in existence, but it does not conclusively show whether or not there was any building upon this estate. The supposition of the best authorities is, that a house of the most commanding, beautiful, and artistic style was built there under the direction, if not the personal oversight, of Peters himself; that Orne the carpenter was employed to build it; that it may have been finished, and possibly occupied by Peters, but not paid for, in consequence of the suddenness of his call to the service of the colony, as one of its agents to look after its interests in London.

Peters never returned to this country, as after the restoration he was committed to the Tower, and indicted for high treason, as having been concerned in the death of King Charles I. He was afterwards tried and convicted of the charge, and was executed in London, October 16, 1660. His private character has been the subject of much discussion both in England and America. He was charged by his enemies with gross immorality, and the most bitter epithets were applied to him by Bishops Burnet,



THE RUFUS CHOATE HOUSE.

(SEE PAGE 80.)

Kenneth and others, but probably they were largely influenced by prejudice.

Orne sold the estate purchased of Peters to Walter Price, in 1659. At this time it is certain that a fine building was standing upon it. It was built before the line of Essex street had been adjusted, and stood out on what is now Essex street, as far as the curb-stone. The heirs of Walter Price sold it, in 1727, to Mr. John Pratt who occupied it for many years as a tavern. It was quite noted in the eighteenth century as "the Great Tavern with many Peaks." It was also at one time called the "Ship Tavern." This building, and the site which it occupied, might well be called the birthplace of literature and science in Salem, as on this spot and in that building the "Social Library" was organized, in 1760. This was the first institution formed in this place for a higher intellectual culture, and the diffusion through this community of a taste for literature and science. No place within our city limits could have been more appropriate than a spot owned by Hugh Peters, and the structure probably erected, and perhaps occupied by him. He was one of the most highly educated persons among the early emigrants, and he was a zealous promoter of popular intelligence. He took an active part in bringing our Harvard College into existence, and made great, though unavailing efforts to have it established in Salem. By some of our local antiquarians it is believed that this veritable building, of which we have been speaking, was designed for a college by him.

"Roger Williams and Hugh Peters," says the

Hon. Charles W. Upham, "more perhaps than any others that can be named, were of the kind to set men thinking, to start speculations and enquiries that would call forth the exercise of mental faculties, and of a nature to retain their hold upon the general interest, and be transmitted as a permanent social element."

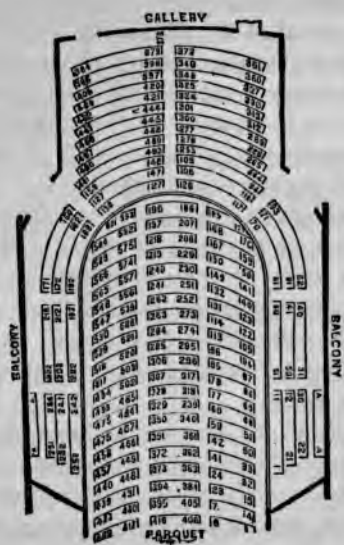
Uncommonly inquisitive minds given to experiments and enterprises in science, art, and literature, is a noted feature in the character of our people of Salem to-day. The presence of persons of marked impressiveness of mental traits among the first settlers and their associates is, of course, the primal and general cause to which results of this sort are to be traced.

There was in existence in Salem, about the middle of the eighteenth century, a "Social Evening Club," designed to promote literature and philosophy. It had among its members such men as Benj. Lynde and Nathaniel Ropes, both Justices of the Supreme Court of the Province, the former, as his father had been, its Chief Justice; Wm. Brown, Judge of the Superior Court; Andrew Oliver, Judge of the Court of Common Pleas; the Rev. Wm. McGilchrist, of the Episcopal Church; the Rev. Thomas Barnard, of the First Church, and Edward Augustus Holyoke, then a young physician, and others of Salem's most eminent, cultivated and intellectual citizens.

The members of this Club, together with some others, met at "the Great Tavern with many Peaks," on the evening of March 31, 1760, for the purpose of "founding in the town of Salem, a hand-

some library of valuable books, apprehending the same may be of very considerable use and benefit, under proper regulation." A subscription was started and a round sum obtained. The Rev. Jeremiah Condy, a Baptist minister, of Boston, who was about to visit England was employed to purchase the books. On their arrival, 415 volumes in all, the "Social Library" was put in operation. It was incorporated in 1797, and it may well be regarded as the foundation of all the institutions and agencies established in this place for the promotion of high intellectual culture. It is quite evident that an interest in philosophical enquiries was a characteristic of the people of Salem, at the time of the formation of this library. A taste for literature and knowledge, a zeal in the prosecution of scientific studies, was imparted to the community, of which we can distinctly trace the imprints and monuments through all our subsequent history.

In 1766 there was a lad of thirteen years of age in Salem, apprenticed to John Appleton. Appleton kept a retail variety store, on the south side of Essex street, east of the Barton-square Church estate, on the lot now owned by Dr. George Choate. This lad had only such advantages of education as a country school district afforded in the town of Woburn, where he was born. But he had early manifested a taste for mechanical and philosophical amusements. Here, in Salem, he found an atmosphere congenial to his original passion, and under the influence of the intellectual energies put in operation by the men who established the old "Social



INTERIOR OF MECHANIC HALL.

(SEE PAGE 91.)

Library," he was stimulated to exercise and exhibit his genius. He persistently strove for the attainment of a full knowledge of philosophy, and attracted much attention by novel and successful experiments in mechanics and chemistry. By a singular succession of circumstances he was drawn into military life in the service of the mother country, and arose to the high distinction of count, physicist and statesman. This boy's name was Benjamin Thompson, known in history as Sir Benjamin Thompson Rumford, but more popularly known as Count Rumford.

Another item of interest might be mentioned in connection with the birth of literature and science in Salem. During the revolutionary war the valuable scientific library of the distinguished philosopher Richard Kirwan, LL.D., of Dublin, was captured in the British Channel on its way to Ireland, by a Beverly privateer. Owing to the liberal and enlightened views of Andrew and John Cabot, owners of the privateer, this library was sold at auction at a very low rate, to an association of gentlemen, among whom were Rev. Manasseh Cutler, of Hamilton, Rev. Joseph Willard and Dr. Joshua Fisher of Beverly, and Reverends Thos. Barnard, John Prince and Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, of Salem. The Social Library with this formed the nucleus of the Salem Athenæum Library, which we will visit when in our stroll we arrive at its present locality.

The "Great Tavern" estate finally came into the possession of Mrs. Ruth Jeffrey, a daughter of Mr. John Pratt, who sold it at auction in 1791 to Col. Benj. Pickman, Dr. William Stearns, and Major

Jonathan Waldo. They immediately covered the premises with the building now standing there,¹ known as the Stearns' block.

West of the northern end of the site of the Stearns' block, in the middle of what is now Washington street, a watch-house² at one time stood. It was built in the beginning of the eighteenth century. The first bellman was then the only watchman "to walk ye towne, from ten o'clock till break of day." The top of this watch-house was ornamented with a carved image of a soldier in full uniform and armed.

The watchman in those days in his perambulations, was required to call out, every now and then, "all's well," together with the hour of the night and the state of the weather. This custom was dispensed with about the year 1817. The watch-house, above alluded to, was not the first in Salem, as from "Felt's Annals" we learn that it was voted by the town, June 16, 1712, that the *old* watch-house should be used for a writing-school.

The first meeting-house which was used for various purposes in conducting the affairs of the settlement, was doubtless used as the first watch-house. Under date of December, 1640, the records of the General Court, say:—"Salem meeting-house is allowed for their watch-house." With the trees all cleared from the land south of this meeting-house, as far as what is now known as the Mill Pond, signals could be readily seen from Castle Hill, south

¹ Essex Institute Hist. Coll., Vol. 9, 2d Part, p. 7.

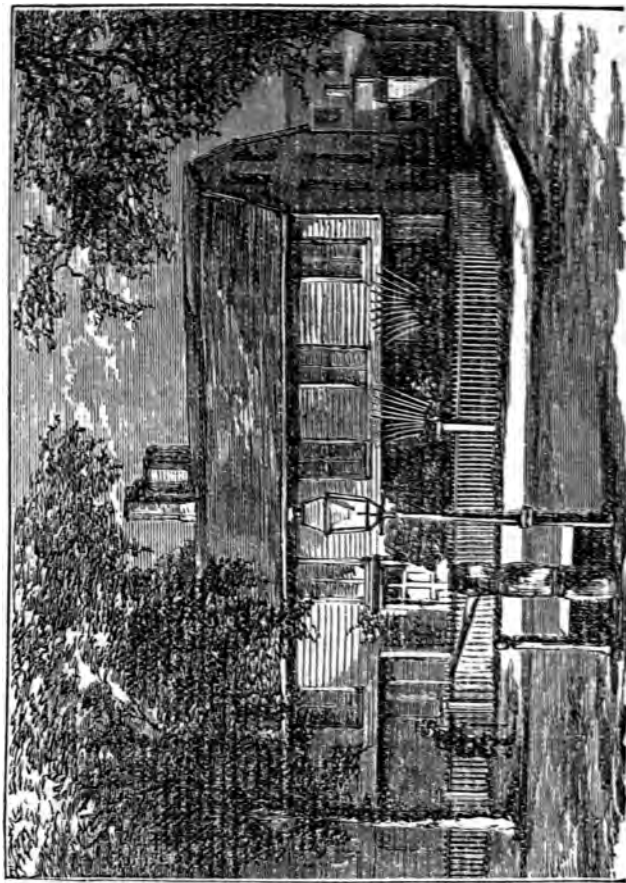
² This old watch-house stands in the rear of the old grammar school-house. See p. 76.

of the pond ; this hill was no doubt so called, because of its being occupied as an outer lookout and station. Approaching danger by land or sea could be instantly made known from its summit, when every man seizing his gun could have hurried to the meeting-house, and made it a garrison. The meeting-house was, of all others, the place for a watch-house.

While we are in this locality it might be well to state, for the information of the present members of the Salem Cadets, that one of the old armories of this venerable organization was in the second story of a building, which stood where Peck's building fronts on Washington street. It was over an apothecary store kept by the late B. F. Browne.

North of Peck's building, on the southern corner of Washington and Lynde streets, stands a brick house. It was built in 1764, by the Hon. Benjamin Pickman, who left it to his son, Clark Gayton Pickman, an active member of one of our first fire engine companies. In this house Elias Haskett Derby lived when he was amassing his riches. Its site was previously occupied by a large wooden house, owned by the Rev. Nicholas Noyes, who was extremely violent in the witch trials of 1692.

The house of Elder Samuel Sharpe, commander of the first fort erected in Salem, stood on the north corner of Washington and Lynde streets. A house of ancient architecture was removed from this site a few years ago. It had seven gables, and was one of the many claimed as the subject of Hawthorne's famous story: "The House of Seven Gables." Hawthorne's "House of Seven Gables" is,



ROGER WILLIAMS' HOUSE.

(SEE PAGE 92.)

undoubtedly, the old house standing at the foot of Turner street.

On the southern corner of Washington and Church streets, where Dr. S. M. Cate now resides, stood the "Oliver Mansion." It was owned and occupied in the seventeenth century, by Edward Bishop, who married Bridget Oliver, widow of Thomas Oliver. Bridget Bishop was the only person tried at the first session of the new Court of Oyer and Terminer, which convened here the first of June, 1692. She was the first victim to suffer death by the witchcraft delusion.

At the time of her trial she was dragged from the "Oliver Mansion" by the back way into Prison-lane, now St. Peter street; thence up Essex street, to the Court House, the appalling spectacle being made as conspicuous as possible. Cotton Mather says: "There was one strange thing with which the Court was newly entertained. As this woman was under a guard passing by the great and spacious meeting-house, she gave a look towards the house; immediately a demon invisibly entering the meeting-house, tore down a part of it; so that though there was no person to be seen there, yet the people at the noise, running in, found a board which was strongly fastened with several nails, transported into another quarter of the house."

The street at the time of her passing through it, was probably thronged by an excited crowd, and some of them may have clambered upon any elevated position to get a sight of the prisoner. The church windows were high, and some one may have

used a board to climb upon, which breaking made the noise. Incredible as it may seem, that of which Mather speaks was brought in as evidence at the trial, and was regarded as weighty and conclusive proof of Bridget's guilt. This was the most important evidence produced against this poor woman, yet she was condemned by the Court, and was executed on the 10th of June. Hon. Chas. W. Upham, author of "Salem Witchcraft," lived on the site of the "Oliver Mansion," when settled as minister over the First Church.

The centre of what is known as the Hubon block is a portion of the residence of the late Judge Daniel Appleton White. Judge White was born in Methuen, June 7, 1776, and was the tenth Judge of Probate for Essex county. He was a member of the Massachusetts Senate and of Congress. He came to Salem in 1817, was one of the founders of the Theological School at Cambridge; was president of the Essex Historical Society and of the Salem Athenæum, and also the first presidents of the Essex Institute and Salem Lyceum.

Just around the corner of Washington and Church streets, east of Dr. Cate's residence, on a portion of the Oliver estate, stands Lyceum Hall. It was built near the close of the year 1830. Its exterior is unpretentious. Its auditorium is small and plain, but for lectures, readings, and such entertainments it is most convenient. The hall is semi-circular in form, the rows of seats rising one above the other on an angle of about thirty-five degrees. This building is the property of the Salem Lyceum, an institution es-



PRESENT NORTH CHURCH.

(SEE PAGE 102.)

tablished for the purpose of mutual instruction and select entertainments, by means of lectures, debates, etc. A fine course of lectures is delivered in this hall each year. The Lyceum was established January 18, 1830, and incorporated on March 4th, of the same year. Lyceum hall was first opened on the evening of January 19, 1831. The Rev. Brown Emerson dedicated it by prayer, and Stephen C. Phillips delivered the introductory lecture. No undertaking of any kind of associated enterprise in this place, has been more successful than this Lyceum. The Hon. George B. Loring is now its president.

The first residence of Governor Endicott in America, stood just north of the northern corner of Washington and Church streets. This building was styled in Endicott's day "a large wooden frame house." It was originally built at Cape Ann, for Roger Conant. After Endicott's arrival at Naumkeag, it was "shook and brought hither." It was two stories high, and the style of its architecture was essentially Gothic, the prevailing style of architecture of that day. It is said, that portions of this veritable dwelling-house of Roger Conant and Governor Endicott, were contained in the building that stood on this corner, until recently moved a little to the east. Daniel Eppes, Esq., a distinguished school-master of the seventeenth century, resided on this same corner from 1675 to the time of his death, which occurred in 1721. What is now Church street was then called Eppes lane. After Mr. Eppes' death a Scotchman, by the name of Somerville, opened a public house here, and had for his sign an "Indian

King." His place was at one time called the "Ship Tavern," but it was not the noted tavern of that name. Benjamin Coates succeeded Somerville, and in 1773 Mr. Jonathan Webb succeeded Coates. Zaddock Buffington, a captain of one of our military companies in 1781, and a tavern keeper, succeeded Webb. A building removed from this spot but a few years ago, and known as the "Newhall Tavern," would lead us to infer that the early dwelling place of our first governor was long associated with the scenes of entertainment for man and beast.

The locality of Washington street from the southern end of the Asiatic building to the northern corner of Church street, is rich in matters of historical interest. By carefully reviewing the scenes and events which we have thus far noted, it will be perceived that, standing midway between these two points and from this centre describing a circle with a radius not greater than 150 feet, within it is found the nucleus of Salem's history, together with much that relates to the entire nation. For instance:—We have the locality of the first settlement; the site of the home of Roger Williams, the birthplace of civil and religious liberty; the home of Hugh Peters, the birthplace of literature and science in Salem; the grounds of the First meeting-house where the first church was organized, and where the use of the ballot was inaugurated in America; the spots on which stood the first, second, and third Town and Court Houses, in which occurred the early persecutions, the witchcraft trials and the stirring scenes incidental to the Revolution; the homes of Governor

Endicott, Francis Higginson, Samuel Sharpe, Hiliard Veren, Bridget Bishop, and in later years of Hon. Charles Wentworth Upham; also the site of the "Hawthorne town pump," the first prison and the early watch-house, together with much more that we have previously alluded to. The homes of Roger Conant, John Woodbury, Peter Palfray and others, not yet mentioned because they are not on Washington street, come within the radius of this circle, of which our present City Hall forms the hub. The seat of our town and city governments has, for 250 years, clung with wonderful tenacity to this spot which is hallowed by so many historical trials and triumphs. Here has the soil been pressed by the feet of every native and adopted son of Salem, from the days of the early settlers to the present time; here the Puritans raised their earnest prayers to God, beseeching him to bless and protect their little band of wanderers in a strange land; from here, in 1775, ascended the supplications to heaven from the patriot sons of Salem, that they might be freed from the tyranny of the mother land and possess a country all their own; here have the praises and the rejoicings been freely indulged in by the men of later years who have enjoyed the great blessings of peace and prosperity, the fruits of the early hardships and trials.

By extending the circle to a radius of a quarter of a mile, the material to be found within it will supply nearly every link to the historical chain connecting the days of Roger Conant with the present time. Here, among other things which we shall mention

during the continuance of our stroll, have been witnessed the public expressions of homage paid to our most noted visitors from time to time. In addition to Washington and Lafayette, might be mentioned Presidents Munroe, Jackson, J. Q. Adams, Polk and Grant; and other national celebrities including Alexander Hamilton, Henry Clay, Chas. C. Pinckney, David Humphreys (an aid to Washington in the Revolution), Gen. William Eaton (noted for his military achievements against the Bashaw of Tripoli); also foreign dignitaries, as Sir Edmund Andros, Marquis de Casteleux, Count Castiglioni, Duke de la Rochefoucault Liancourt, the Prince of Wales, the Duke of Alexis, and others who might be mentioned, from all parts of the globe. The most of these people were received as became their rank or station, while some of them made but a flying visit and their reception was meagre. It certainly seems as if it would be impossible to find, anywhere in this country, another spot so small around which linger so many hallowed memories.

Some writers have claimed that "the first free school in the land, if not in the world, was established at Salem," while other writers have positively declared that the first free school in our republic was founded in 1621, and located in Virginia. A list of subscribers to a school of this kind has been found on the last leaf of the first volume of Boston "Records." It is dated 1636. This date is prior to that of the first free school in Salem. According to this, Boston has the honor of establishing the second free school in the republic, and the first in the Mas-



SOUTH CHURCH.

(SEE PAGE 104.)

sachusetts Colony. The second in this colony was established at Salem, in accordance with the following order, passed in September, 1641 :—

“Ordered that a note be published on next Lecture day, that such as have children to be kept at schoole, would bring in their names, and what they will give for one whole year ; and also that if anie poor bodie hath children, or a childe, to be put to schoole, and is not able to pay for their schooling, that the towne will pay it by rate.”

The writer has found no evidence of the exact location of this school, but has seen it stated that it was upon the Endicott farm, situated in what is now Peabody. The third¹ free school in the colony was established at Ipswich in 1642.

On the east side of Washington street, north of Federal street, was the Grammar school-house. It was erected in 1785, and was used for many years for school purposes. It is still standing, and is now occupied as a cabinet shop by H. W. Thurston. Previous to the erection of this building, the Grammar school was in the brick school-house which was torn down the same year to make room for the fourth Town and Court House. In this brick school-house the books of the Social Library were at one time deposited.

North of Governor Endicott's house, was the lot of the Rev. George Burdett. It is described in the original grant as the “Rock beyond Mr. Endicott's house.” This term “Rock” doubtless referred to

¹ Felt's “Annals.”

the bank of the river. Burdett came from England and became a freeman in 1635. He united with the First Congregational Church, and preached for them from 1635 to 1637. It will be observed that this period was between the time of Roger Williams' resignation and the settlement of Hugh Peters as pastor of this church.

The fine edifice of the Tabernacle Church stands on the south-western corner of Washington and Federal streets. It is the last matter of interest that we have in connection with the former street. In spite of the many facts which we have mentioned, hardly a vestige now remains in this street of its ancient historical landmarks. All have been swept away by the onward march of improvements. But the glorious visions of the memorable past hovering above this street, which so proudly and appropriately bears the name of the "Father of his country," can never be obliterated while the works of the pen of man shall last to instruct the future generations.

The Tabernacle Church originated in a division of the First Church, which was made in April, 1735. The first members of the Tabernacle Church constituted the majority of the old church, and included the pastor Samuel Fiske, and other officers. They, therefore, claimed to be the First Church. The magistrates of the colony, however, would not so consider their title, and the church then voted that it be called the "Third Church of Christ in Salem."

The first house of worship, after the separation, was built in 1736, and stood on the site of what is

now the King block, on Essex street. This house was destroyed in the "great fire of 1774." The second house was built on the site of the present building, and was modelled after Mr. Whitfield's chapel in London. Hence it took its present name Tabernacle, and the name "Third Church" went into disuse without any formal action or change in the church organization.

The present edifice was erected in 1854, and dedicated December 1, of the same year. It cost \$21,400. It is 115 feet long and 68 feet wide. The spire rises to a height of 180 feet. In 1868 an addition was made to the edifice in the form of a transept, by removing an old brick chapel, which stood in the rear of it, and which was built in 1819. This transept cost \$11,200. It contains accommodations for the Sabbath School, and for social and religious meetings. Here also the meetings of the Essex Congregational Club are held, where are read and discussed by the clergy and laymen, valuable and interesting papers tending to promote the general interest of Congregationalism. This edifice, as enlarged, is one of the most commodious in the State.

Among the noted clergymen settled over this church were Samuel Worcester, D.D., his son Samuel M. Worcester, D.D., and Elias Cornelius, D.D. At the present time (December, 1877) the Tabernacle society has no settled pastor.

CHAPTER III.

**NORTH RIVER.—FIRST HIGHWAY.—FEDERAL STREET.—PRESENT
COURT HOUSE.—FIRST BAPTIST CHURCH.—OLD NORTH MEET-
ING-HOUSE.—REFUGES CHURCH.—BENJAMIN LYNCH.—
FIRST FORT.—WESLEY CHAPEL.—OLD PAVED STREET.—RAD-
FORD-SQUARE CHURCH.—MECHANIC HALL.—CHURCH STREET
CHURCH.—FIRST BRICK HOUSE.—ROGER WILLIAMS HOUSE.—
RICHARD DAVENPORT.—WITCHCRAFT.—NORTH CHURCH.—DR.
LOVING.—NEW JERUSALEM CHURCH.—BACON TAVERN.—FIRST
TOWN CLERK.—SOUTH CHURCH.—HAMILTON HALL.—PICK-
ERING HOUSE AND TIMOTHY PICKERING.—SCHOOLS.—BROAD
STREET CEMETERY.**

HAVING strolled in a northerly direction about
a fifth of a mile from our starting point, and
across a portion of the diameter of the larger
circle previously mentioned, we will proceed
as best we can within the remainder of this orbicular
space, and note the remaining objects of interest.
Our course will be through or into the following
streets:—Federal, North, Lynde, Sewall, Essex,
Cambridge, Chestnut, Broad, Summer, Norman,
and Front, through Derby square, Essex, Central,
Charter, Elm, Essex, Union, Herbert, Newbury, to
the Common; thence up Essex, down St. Peter,
through Federal and Bridge streets to the North
bridge.

Before proceeding farther, let us take one view of
that portion of North river stretched out before us to
the north. The Indians called this "Nahum Keike"
river. It was then broad and beautiful, extending
from Bass river far up into what is now the limits of

Peabody. Its waters were pure and undefiled by the refuse of tanneries, and were unobstructed by the many innovations which now line their course. Conspicuous among these encroachments in both directions, is the "made land" occupied by the railroads. The tide originally flowed up very near to the entrance of the tunnel.

"Nahum Keike," or Naumkeag, as modern orthographers write it, was claimed by Cotton Mather and John White, both Puritan divines, "to be rather Hebrew than Indian, and by interpretation the bosom of consolation, Nahum signifying comfort and Keike signifying a haven." The "Planters Plea," a paper printed in London, 1630, claimed by reason of this interpretation, that the Indians here anciently had some knowledge of the Jews.

The first highways were along the banks of the North and South rivers. Derby, Front, Mill and Margin streets, mark the general course of the first highway along the South river. The highway along the bank of the North river, from what is now Boston street to the present Beverly bridge, was discontinued about the year 1766, when Federal street was laid out and accepted. Federal street was so called as a sign of the united feeling for such a street, between the parties for and against the discontinuance of the eight-feet way on the bank of North river. That portion from North to Boston streets is through what was the last remaining part of the old forest. From Washington to North street was formerly known as Marlboro' street; from Washington to St. Peter street as County street.



PICKERING HOUSE.

(SEE PAGE 105.)

At the junction of Washington and Federal streets, on the north-western corner, stands the first Court House erected by the county for its exclusive use. It is constructed of well wrought granite, is 105 feet long, 55 feet wide, and is two stories high. It was built in 1849, and until 1864 was used for all court trials and county purposes. The old court room is now occupied by the Probate Court (Judge George F. Choate). In the other parts of the building may be found the offices of the Registry of Deeds, County Commissioners, County Treasurer, and Clerk of Courts. In the office of the latter official may be seen all the old county records covering a period of more than 250 years. None of them, however, will attract such close attention from the stranger as the old witch papers. Here are the original warrants on which those poor victims of Parris's revenge and Puritan superstition were arrested, tried and executed. The time may come when nothing short of such positive evidence as these papers, will make the people believe that the witchcraft delusion ever had an existence. The witch-pins that were produced at the trials of the so-called witches, and with which, it was in evidence, they had tormented their victims, may be seen in this office. An hour or more might be profitably spent here by the visitor in examining these evidences of the superstitious errors of the past.

The Court House, now in use by the Superior Courts of Essex county, stands on the north side of Federal street within the same enclosure and next westerly to the granite Court House above

described. It is a model Court House, only that the acoustic properties of the court room are not perfect. In the court rooms of the severally mentioned Court Houses, linked as they are so intimately with each other, justice has been demanded by Daniel Webster, Rufus Choate, Joseph Story, Richard H. Dana, Benj. F. Thomas, Benj. F. Butler, Chas. P. Thompson and other noted national celebrities, together with the whole coterie of the Essex bar, now led by the Hon. Wm. D. Northend, Stephen B. Ives, Jr., E. J. Sherman, and others. Here also have the laws been faithfully expounded by the long line of honorable judges, from those of the earliest days to the judiciary of the present. Among them none rank higher than Otis P. Lord and Wm. C. Endicott of the Supreme Court, and Lincoln P. Brigham, Chief Justice of the Superior Court, all of Salem.

A few rods west of the Court Houses stands the First Baptist Church. This church was formed by Baptists who had long been residents of Salem but who first began in 1798, to assemble in devotional meetings separate from other churches. These meetings were often led by ministers of the denomination from other cities. In 1804 accessions to the number of the Baptists, and the lack of a convenient place for worship, led to the erection of a small house near the site of the present house of worship. The church was regularly constituted on Monday, December 24, 1804, and numbered sixteen members at its formation. A society was incorporated in the year 1806.

The first house was soon unable to accommodate the increased congregations, so that within a year from the time it was opened another edifice was planned. The new house was dedicated January 1, 1806, the old house being valued at that time at \$2200. The cost of the new house, with improvements afterwards made and other land purchased for the front on Federal street, was nearly \$30,000. In 1868 this building was thoroughly remodelled at a cost of about \$20,000. A chapel had been previously built, in 1856, at a cost of about \$10,000, to which parlors and other conveniences were added later, at a cost of \$1200. On the night of October 31, 1877, the chapel and a part of the church were burned, the whole edifice suffering great damage from smoke and water, rendering thorough renovation necessary.

The ministers of the church from its foundation have been as follows:—Rev. Lucius Bolles, D.D.; Rev. Rufus Babcock, D.D.; Rev. John Wayland; Rev. T. D. Anderson, D.D.; Rev. R. C. Mills, D.D. The present pastor is the Rev. George E. Merrill, who was settled here February 1, 1877.

On the southern corner of North and Lynde streets stands the stately residence of Judge Lord, of the Supreme Court. It was built by the late Capt. Charles Ward. The original North Church meeting-house previously occupied this site. In its latter days it was used as a carpet factory, and also as a ward-room. Much of the old church timber is contained in Judge Lord's house. This land was purchased for a meeting-house lot, February 14,

1772. There were forty-three associates in the purchase, including John Nutting the former owner of the estate. On the 3d of March following, the purchasers met at the Town Hall and organized as "The proprietors of the North meeting-house." The house was erected that same year, the foundation being laid on the 11th of May.

It was first occupied on the 23d of August, although then not quite completed. Early in October the bell arrived from London. The spire was raised on the 19th of the same month. It was in this house on February 26, 1775, that the Rev. Thomas Barnard dismissed his congregation when informed of the approach of Col. Leslie and his command. The house fronted on Lynde street and was occupied until 1836, when the stone edifice, now standing on Essex street, was dedicated.¹ The corner-stone of the new house was laid May 16, 1835.

The beautiful Lynde street with its fine gardens, grass plots and handsome dwellings, is laid over what was formerly a swamp. On the east side of this street stands the Salem residence of the late Rufus Choate, LL.D., now occupied by the Hon. Wm. D. Northend. Mr. Choate was a native of Essex, Massachusetts, but made his home in Salem for many years. He was an eminent lawyer and orator, and after the death of Mr. Webster was the acknowledged leader of the Massachusetts bar.

Lynde street takes its name from Benjamin Lynde, Chief Justice of Massachusetts in 1729. He took

¹ See page 102.



NORMAL SCHOOL.

(SEE PAGE 108.)

the oath of attorney in 1701, previous to which date there was, among the Puritans, a decided antipathy to lawyers. He owned the land here at one time, and on what was known by the Lynde family as the Arbor lot, was erected the first fort in Naumkeag. This fort stood about where the Wesleyan Methodist Chapel is on Sewall street. It was, in all probability, built by Conant and his associates in 1626. Tradition informs us that the first town-meetings or gatherings of the people were held in this fort; also that Governor Endicott and his Council were accustomed to assemble there. A palisade was doubtless built in this vicinity, to which, in times of attack, the women and children fled for protection. By good authorities this palisade is supposed to have included the entire square now formed by Essex, Washington, Norman and Crombie streets.

The Wesleyan Methodist Chapel was built by Rev. J. Fillmore in 1823. It was occupied but a short time as a church, until 1872, when it was purchased and refitted by a new society from the Lafayette Methodist Episcopal Church. It then received the name of "Wesley Chapel." It was re-dedicated in May, 1872. Its pastors have been the Rev. Joshua Gill, and the Rev. W. J. Hambleton. The present pastor is Rev. W. H. Meredith.

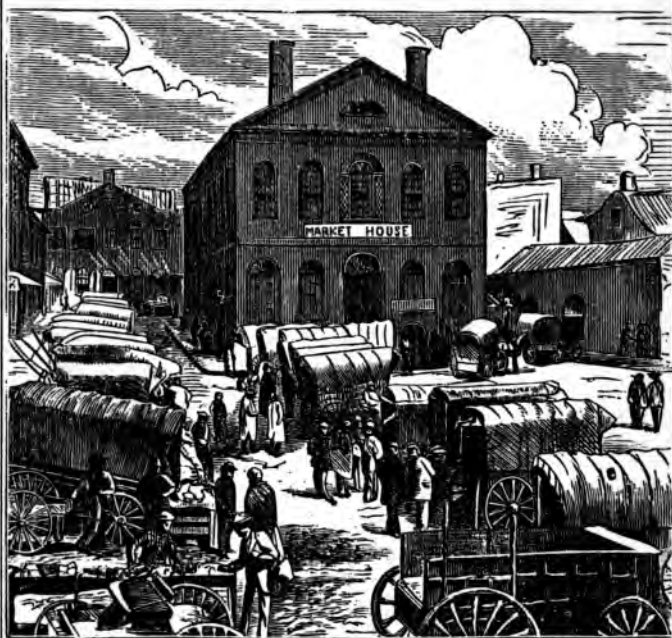
That portion of Essex street from Washington to North streets was paved about 1773; it was the first street paved in Salem, and was called "Old Paved street." It is probably the only portion of Essex street that was regularly laid out. Nearly the whole length of "Old Paved street" was swept by fire in

1774, when "Dr. Whitaker's meeting-house,¹ the custom-house, eight dwellings, fourteen stores, shops and barns, besides sheds, and other out houses," were destroyed. This portion of Essex street is laid over what was originally a swamp, which extended north beyond Lynde street. The general line of Essex street was formed by chance. Lots of one acre each extending from the river's bank, were granted to the early settlers. The course of this street marks the rear line of these lots from South river below Washington street and from North river above North street. This accounts for its crookedness. It was at one time called "King street," and afterwards "Main street."

On the south side of that portion which was called "Old Paved street," stands the Barton-square Church edifice. It was built in 1824, mainly through the efforts of Stephen C. Phillips, Willard Peele, E. Hersey Derby, George Nichols, and Nathaniel West, jr., who desired to call to Salem the Rev. Henry Colman, then a pastor in Hingham, Mass. The estimated cost of the building and land was \$25,500. In 1843 the vestry was altered and enlarged, and in 1855 the meeting-house was entirely remodelled. Its pastors have been the Rev. Henry Colman, Rev. James W. Thompson, and the Rev. Augustus M. Haskell. The present pastor is the Rev. George Batchelor.

Mechanic Hall, the principal hall in the city, occupies the western corner of Essex and Crombie

¹ Tabernacle Church.



MARKET SQUARE AND TOWN HALL.

(SEE PAGE 113.)

streets. It has a fine stage, and a capacity for seating 1093 people. It was built in 1839, and was altered and improved in 1870. It is the property of the Mechanic Hall Corporation, formed in 1839. Howard Hall is situated in the basement of this building; also the Salem Charitable Mechanic Association, organized in 1817, incorporated 1822.

East of this hall, on Crombie street, is the Crombie street Orthodox meeting-house. It is built of brick, was erected in 1828, and was first used as a theatre. Aaron J. Phillips, from the Chatham Garden Theatre, N. Y., was the lessee. For the prize poem at the opening, \$50 were awarded. The first play acted in the Salem Theatre was Inchbald's comedy, "Wives as they Were." For want of sufficient patronage the theatre was sold in 1832 for a house of worship to the congregation of the Rev. William Williams. The present pastor is the Rev. Hugh Elder.

The first brick house in Salem was built on the eastern corner of Essex and Crombie streets in 1707. It belonged to Mr. Benj. Marston. It is said to have been pulled down because his wife thought it damp and injurious to health, a fact which created a strong prejudice here for a time against brick houses. This edifice had free-stone capitals for its front corners, and was an elegant mansion for its day. The Crombie tavern afterward occupied this site. It is now occupied by W. C. Packard & Co.'s furniture warerooms.

On the western corner of Essex and North streets, stands what is generally known at the present time as "The Old Witch-House." By some it is known

as the "Curwen House." Our local antiquarians have more fittingly termed it the "Roger Williams House," they having concluded, from the best proofs in existence, that it is the identical house in which Roger Williams lived when exiled by an order of the General Council in 1635, and in which he persisted in preaching his doctrines during the fall of that year, and from whence he fled in January, 1636, to become the founder of the State of Rhode Island. The house has undergone several transformations. It is shown, on page 68, as it was in the eighteenth century. The date of the erection of this house is not known. Felt says "it was built by Capt. George Corwin in 1642." This is now known to be incorrect, as George Corwin came to Salem in 1638, was Captain of a company of cavalry, and lived on Washington street, near the corner of Norman street, until 1660, in the house which, in 1692, was occupied by his grandson, the sheriff.

There are early town documents in existence proving that the estate on the corner of North and Essex streets, was owned by Roger Williams, and that the house which stood upon it in 1640, had been occupied by him. It appears that this estate afterwards came into the possession of Capt. Richard Davenport. The Commoner's Records show that Capt. Davenport owned another house. It stood prior to 1661, on that part of the Williams estate which in 1721 was called "the garden." This latter house stood at some distance from Essex street, and was the one occupied by Davenport, when, with Endicott, he cut the cross from the King's colors, because as they declared, "it savored of popery." In

1644 Davenport removed to Boston and took command of the first defence raised upon Castle Island (now Fort Independence), Boston harbor. He was killed by lightning while serving at his post July 15, 1665, aged 60 years. The whole country mourned the loss of this veteran soldier.

In 1674 the administrators of Davenport's estate conveyed the Roger Williams house, and the two acres of land adjoining, one hundred and sixty feet in width and extending to the North river, to Jonathan Corwin, Esq., who occupied it for many years. Corwin was one of the judges in the witchcraft trials, and tradition handed down through the Curwen family, has it that private examinations of individuals charged with witchcraft, or perhaps grand jury proceedings, were carried on in one of the apartments of this house.

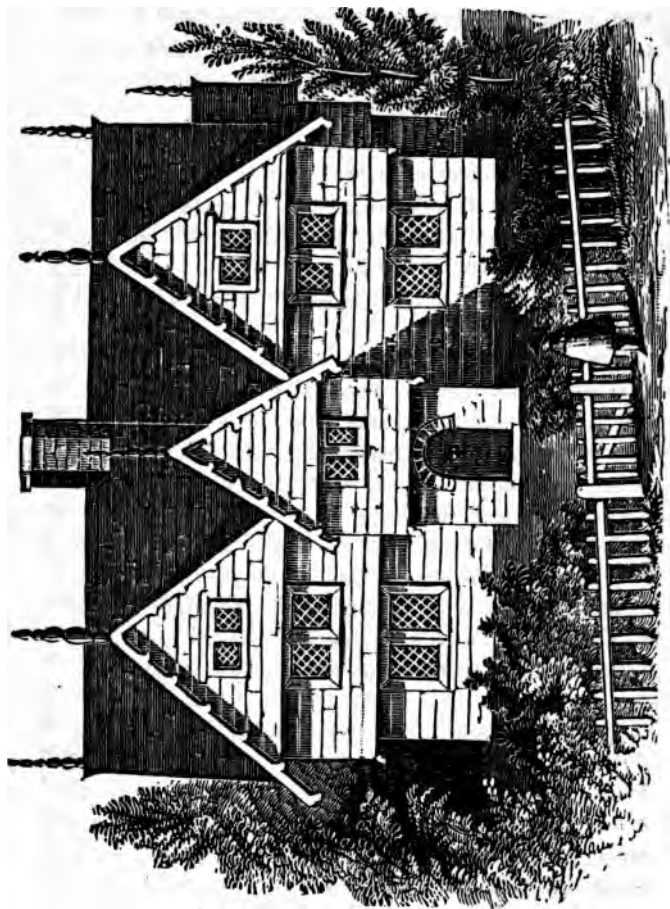
In the seventeenth century this edifice was one of the most tasteful in Salem. It has undergone several transformations since then, yet a portion of it still looks like the production of a by-gone age. Felt says, "It was the premises of a noted robbery in 1684." The scenes which have made this building, among others, so attractive to visitors from abroad were enacted near the close of the seventeenth century, and constitute the most tragic episode in the history of Salem, or, in fact, of the entire country. They are known as the "Witchcraft Delusion."¹ This episode has attracted uni-

¹ For further particulars of this tragedy than are given in this book, see "Salem Witchcraft," 2 Vols., 8vo, 1867, by Chas. W. Upham.

versal attention since the date of its occurrence, and will ever make Salem notable throughout the world. It is a chapter of the most deplorable events; so indelibly are they impressed upon the pages of history that they can never be erased. Yet this fearful experience was not without its beneficial effects. It has taught the world that under peculiar circumstances and more particularly of public excitements, even intelligent people may become the most deluded. Also that superstition and religious fanaticism may bring many an innocent victim to an untimely death.

The solemn gloomy turn imparted to the first settlers, by reason of the persecutions in the old world, together with the trials and privations experienced in this, was naturally enough transmitted to their children. These children were reared in a wilderness where neither civilization nor cultivation prevailed, and where wild beasts and Indians, roaming at large, were especial objects of fear. They suffered in mind a want of confidence and compassion, which gave rise to feelings of both horror and hostility. Added to this there were disturbances among them of a political nature, and there were no means of speedy communication between the scattered villages. Hostile privateers were on the sea coast, and almost every person in public office was the victim of jealousies, animosities, and discontent. It was likewise an age of superstition.

Books had been printed in England on the subject of witchcraft. Some of them, no doubt, had reached here. Under the general gloomy state of affairs it



ROGER WILLIAMS HOUSE IN 1835.—(SEE PAGE 92.)

had become to be quite a general belief, that Satan was at large and was working successfully in the colony; that some of the colonists even, had entered into a compact with him, pledged to a furtherance of his cause. If such persons were females they were termed "witches;" if males, they were called "wizards." When suspected they were made the special objects of persecution. The entire people, in their religious zeal and depressed public spirits, considered them in the light of persons who had transferred their allegiance and worship from God to the devil.

The people of Salem were not alone in the belief that witchcraft was a crime, and could be detected, and that when detected the witch, or wizard, should be punished. As early as 1648, our General Court considered seriously the method adopted in the old country for the discovery of witches, so that they might apply it to a case, to which their attention had then already been called. Previous to the great development of the delusion here, various individuals belonging to other parts of the colony had been tried for the offence. Some of them had been executed.

Salem witchcraft commenced during the month of February, 1692, at the house of the Rev. Samuel Parris, in that part of the original town, which is now Danvers. The daughter of Mr. Parris and his niece, Abigail Williams, aged nine and twelve years respectively, began to act "in a strange and unusual manner." They would utter loud and piteous cries, creep into holes, hide under benches, and put them-

selves into odd postures. The physicians pronounced them bewitched, and all the ministers were invited to meet at Mr. Parris' house, and unite with him in solemn religious services. As the interest in their actions increased, they became more violent, and accused Tituba, a South American slave in the Parris family, of having bewitched them. Mr. Parris beat Tituba and compelled her to acknowledge herself guilty. These children next complained of Sarah Goode and Sarah Osborne, and then of two other women of excellent character, Corey and Nurse. All were thrown into prison. John, Tituba's husband, for his own safety, accused others. The demon was thus let loose in the midst of the people, but it was the demon of superstition rather than the demon of witchery. Says Thatcher on this subject, "So violent was the popular prejudice against every appearance of witchcraft, that it was deemed meritorious to denounce all that gave the least reason for suspicion. Every child and every gossip was prepared to recognize a witch, and no one could be certain of personal safety. As the infatuation increased, many of the most reputable females, and several males also, were apprehended and committed to prison. There is good reason to believe that, in some instances, the vicious and abandoned availed themselves of gratifying their corrupt passions, of envy, malice and revenge." Sad indeed was the delusion, and shocking the extent to which the bewildered imaginations and excited passions of the people hurried them on to deeds for which they are now visited with unmeasured reproach.

The following is a list of those who lost their lives as witches, or wizards, by the hand of the executioner:—

Rev. GEO. BURROUGHS, of Wells, Maine; WILMOT REED, of Marblehead; MARGARET SCOT, of Rowley; SUSANNA MARTIN, of Amesbury; ELIZABETH HOWE, of Ipswich; SARAH WILDES and MARY ESTES, of Topsfield; SAMUEL WARDWELL, MARTHA CURRIER, and MARY PARKER, of Andover; JOHN PROCTOR, GEO. JACOBS, sen., JOHN WILLARD, SARAH GOODE, REBECCA NURSE, GILES COREY and MARTHA COREY, of Salem Village; ANN PUDEATER, BRIDGET BISHOP, and ALICE PARKER, of Salem.

Corey was pressed to death, because he refused to speak, knowing that speech would avail him nothing. His tongue was pressed out of his mouth, but was forced in again by the sheriff with his cane. About 150 persons in all were accused of witchcraft, including nine children, varying from 5 to 14 years.

Various were the accusations brought against them, such as having familiarity with "the black-man," who it was claimed was ever by their side whispering in their ear; holding days of hellish fasts and thanksgivings; eating red bread and drinking blood; transforming themselves and their victims into various forms; signing contracts with Satan; entering his employ, and yielding to his commands; afflicting others by pinching, pricking with pins, striking, etc., when many miles distant; and divers other accusations that would be laughed to scorn at the present day. All matters of affliction or of discord among the people, such as a controversy respecting the settlement of a minister,

which had for a time been going on ; also the death of some of the most influential of the citizens, were attributed to Satanic influences. With such inflammable matter, in an age of superstition, the result is not to be wondered at.

Cotton Mather, one of the most learned ministers of that time led in the preaching to the people of sermons designed to inflame rather than abate the panic. He adopted the doctrine of demons, and was exceedingly energetic in endeavoring to spread the delusion into other parts of the colony. To him is largely ascribed the extent of this calamity. It is questionable with some writers as to whether he did not largely impose upon the superstitions of the people, for some "Jesuitical purpose." In these days of charity, we are rather inclined to think that he led, only because he was looked up to in this as in other things as a leader, and that instead of calmly and reasonably investigating the accusations made, he fell in with the others and supported and increased their importance, by well-laid arguments and discussions. On the simplest and the most absurd evidence people of most exemplary christian character were put on trial, and, unless they could prove themselves not to be in league with Satan, they were sentenced to death.

Innocence was a difficult thing to prove under the excited state of the people, magistrates and the clergy. Nothing that the poor accused persons could say, or do, would be taken as other than the exercise of powers bestowed on them by the evil one. Among other foolish and harsh measures to test

witches, was to take the accused to a river or pond, and throw them in. If they swam they were pronounced witches and treated as such; if they could not swim they would suffer the danger of being drowned. The most effectual way to escape accusation, was to become an accuser, and the number of "witches," and "wizards," rapidly increased. "From March to August, 1692," writes Dr. Bentley, "was the most distressing time Salem ever knew: business was interrupted, the town deserted, terror was in every countenance, and distress in every heart. Every place was the subject of some direful tale, fear haunted every street, melancholy dwelt in silence in every place after the sun retired. The population was diminished, business could not for some time recover its former channels, and the innocent suffered with the guilty. But as soon as the judges ceased to condemn, the people ceased to accuse. Terror at the violence and the guilt of the proceedings, succeeded instantly to the conviction of blind zeal, and what every man had encouraged, all now professed to abhor. Every expression of sorrow was found in Salem. The church erased all the ignominy they had attached to the dead, by recording a most humble acknowledgment of their error. But a diminished population, the injury done to religion, and the distress of the aggrieved, were seen and felt with the greatest sorrow."

When the authorities were convinced of their error, the Governor ordered all those accused and not tried, to be discharged. The Salem prison was full of them. Such a "Jail Delivery" was never known



MANSION HOUSE.

(SEE PAGE 120.)

before or since in New England. The witchcraft delusion was, at the best, a most unhappy affair, but as Hon. Joseph Story has said, "We may lament the errors of the times which led to these persecutions, but surely our ancestors had no special reasons for shame, in a belief which had the universal sanction of their own and all former ages, which counted in its train, philosophers as well as enthusiasts; which was graced by the learning of prelates, as well as by the countenance of kings; which the law supported by its mandates, and the purest judges felt no compunctions in enforcing." Much as we might desire to expunge this record, no history of Salem, of the state, of the country, or of the world, would be complete without its narration.

A little to the west of the Roger Williams house, stands the present fine edifice of the North Church. The house was first finished plain, but in 1847 it received its present ornamentation under the direction of the late Francis Peabody. Its entire cost, including the land it occupies, was \$30,000. Among its eminent clergymen were the Rev. Thos. Barnard, D.D., son of the Rev. Thomas, of the First Church; Rev. John E. Abbott, Rev. John Brazier, Rev. Octavius B. Frothingham and Rev. Charles B. Lowe. The present pastor is the Rev. E. B. Willson. The 100th anniversary of "Leslie's retreat" was commemorated in this church on the 26th of February, 1875. Addresses were delivered by Mayor Williams and the Rev. E. B. Willson, and a scholarly oration delivered by the Hon. George B. Loring. The event was one of unusual interest. The 50th

anniversary of the same event was observed, in 1825, in the old North meeting-house.

A few rods west of the North Church, is the residence of Dr. George B. Loring. Dr. Loring is a noted politician, an eminent scholar, and a fine orator. He is a native of North Andover, though long a resident of Salem. He has been a member of the State Legislature, was president of the State Senate for three or four years, and is our present representative in Congress.

About opposite Dr. Loring's, on Essex street, stands the New Jerusalem Church edifice. This house was dedicated April 18, 1872. The property cost \$17,000. The first convert to the faith of this church in Salem, is believed to have been Major Joseph Hiller, who was appointed Collector of the port of Salem, under Washington's administration. Major Hiller died in 1814. His portrait hangs in the Custom House. The first meeting for worship was held in 1840, at the house of Mrs. Burleigh, corner of Lynde and Washington streets. There were present but four persons. In the year 1844, Rev. O. P. Hiller, a grandson of Major Hiller, came to Salem, and preached in Lyceum Hall on the evening of July 24th, to about four hundred people.

In 1862, Rev. T. B. Hayward was invited to come to Salem, by the few people then interested in the "Heavenly Doctrines." As the result of his labors the "Salem Society of the New Jerusalem Church," consisting of thirteen members, was organized by him January 25, 1863. Mr. Hayward left the next year. Among his successors were the Rev. Abiel

Silver, Rev. L. G. Jordan, and the present pastor, Rev. A. F. Frost. The society now has thirty-four members, with a Sabbath School of forty children, the usual Sabbath congregation being about sixty.

On the site of the New Jerusalem Church a tavern with the sign of an eagle was kept in 1794, by Jacob Bacon. This building was removed and is now standing in Botts' court.

Thomas Putnam was the first clerk of Salem Village. His town residence was on the north side of Essex street. Its front embraced the western part of the present North Church grounds, and extended to a point just beyond the head of Cambridge street. Thomas Putnam possessed a large property by inheritance, took an active part in military, ecclesiastical, and municipal affairs. He was the grandfather of the famous Revolutionary General, Israel Putnam.

The South Church edifice occupies the eastern corner of Cambridge and Chestnut streets. It was built in 1804. Its dimensions are 66 by 80 feet, with a spire 166 feet high. The building and land it occupies cost \$23,819.78. The church at its first erection, was sadly destitute of modern elegancies and conveniences. There is no record of any heating apparatus until 1812, when a brick Russian stove was used. In 1860 the interior of the church was remodelled and various repairs made at a cost of nearly \$7000.

As before stated the Tabernacle Church society was formed by members who seceded from the First Church. In 1774 another difficulty arose in the se-

ceding society, over a question of church government, during which controversy their house of worship was burned¹ and the church was rent assunder. The minority formed the nucleus of the church and society now worshipping in the South Church. Their first place of worship was in what was known as the "Assembly Building," which occupied the land back of the present church, where the chapel now stands. It was first occupied, December 18, 1774, and then contained twenty-eight wall pews and twenty-eight floor pews. Since the separation of the Tabernacle society, the South parish has had only four settled pastors, viz.:—Rev. Daniel Hopkins, D.D., Rev. Brown Emerson, D.D., Rev. Israel E. Dwinell, D.D., and the present pastor, Rev. Edward S. Atwood. In the seventeenth century the lot upon which the South Church stands, was used as a brick yard.

Opposite the South Church, on the south-eastern corner of Chestnut and Cambridge streets, stands the Hamilton Hall building. This hall was built during the Revolutionary war period, by an association of wealthy gentlemen, for assemblies. Like the old building above mentioned, it was at one time called the Assembly building.

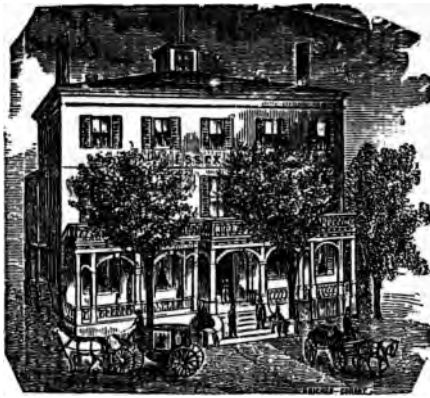
Chestnut street is the finest street in Salem. It is shaded with stately elms, and on either side are rows of elegant mansions, occupied mostly by the descendants of our early merchant princes.

House No. 18 Broad street was built by John Pickering in 1650. It is known as the Pickering

¹ See page 89.

house. Timothy Pickering, LL. D., soldier and statesman, occupied this house. It has always remained in the family, and is to-day the residence of John Pickering, broker.

Timothy Pickering was one of the most remarkable of Salem men. He was born here July 17, 1745, and died January 29, 1829. Admitted to the bar in 1768, he became the champion and leader of the patriots of Essex county. He wrote and delivered the address of the people of Salem to Gov. Gage in 1774, on the occasion of the Boston port bill. He was the colonel in command of the troops who opposed the first armed resistance to the British troops, February 26, 1775, at North bridge, and prevented their crossing to seize the cannon concealed in North Salem. He was a Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, for Essex county, and sole Judge of the Maritime Court, for the middle district. In the fall of 1776, with his regiment of 700 men, he joined Washington in N. J. He was made adjutant-general of the army in 1777, and took part in the battles of Brandywine and Germantown. He was made a member of the board of war in November of the same year; and succeeded Gen. Greene as quartermaster-general in 1780. After the war he removed to Philadelphia. In 1786 he was sent to adjust a controversy between various claimants of the Wyoming settlement. During this trouble he was waylaid by a band of disguised persons near Wilkesbarre, Pa., and he was imprisoned, ill-treated, and his life was threatened. When he re-appeared to his family, twenty days later, he was so changed by his suffer-



ESSEX HOUSE.

(SEE PAGE 120.)

ings that his children did not recognize him. In 1787 he was the delegate of Luzerne county, to the Pennsylvania Convention for considering the United States' Constitution, and zealously favored its adoption. He afterwards filled the national offices of post-master general, secretary of war, and secretary of state. He retired from office poor, and settled in a log-hut on some wild lands in Pennsylvania. He finally returned to Salem, and was subsequently made Chief Justice of Essex county Court of Common Pleas, was a United States senator; member of the board of war of Massachusetts, during the war of 1812-15, and later a member of Congress. He was one of the leaders of the Federal party in the United States, a talented writer, a brave and patriotic soldier, and an impartial, able and energetic public officer.

Nearly opposite the Pickering house, on the southern corner of Broad and Summer streets, stands one of the handsomest public buildings in our city. It is the State Normal School building, a fine brick structure of three stories, the style of architecture being modest yet very tasty. This school was established by the State, with the liberal co-operation of the city of Salem and the Eastern Railway Company. Its purpose is that of fitting female school teachers for their work. It has had three principals:—Richard Edwards, Alpheus Crosby, and the present principal Daniel B. Hagar, all of whom have met with great success. Under the present management, during the past twelve years the institution has become the largest and the acknowledged best

Normal School in the Commonwealth. The first class was received in September, 1854, since which time 1970 ladies have been members of the school. Nine hundred have graduated. The instruction is based on the common-sense idea of that which is practical, the aim being rather to teach how to learn than to teach any special branch, though all common English branches are taught, and some of the higher studies may be pursued. The school generally has on an average about 225 pupils.

West of the above building stands the Salem High-School building. It is a very modest structure, yet one that very well answers its purpose. This school is under the charge of J. W. Perkins. It graduates a large number of ladies and gentlemen every year. Between the High and the Normal School buildings is a little brick school-house which was used many years ago.

The first grammar school in Salem was established in 1637. In 1699 there were but twenty scholars. The Rev. John Fisk was the first teacher, and Mr. Oliver Carlton the last teacher of this school in its separate identity. It was called successively the Grammar School, the Latin and the Fisk. An English High School for boys was founded in 1827 and located in the Latin-School building; it was subsequently named the Bowditch School. Gen. Henry K. Oliver was the first, and Mr. Albert G. Boyden the last, teacher of the Boys' High School. In 1845 the High School for girls was established. It was called the Saltonstall School. Its first location was in a school-house which stood on the south

side of Federal street, just west of Washington street; next in Franklin building; then in Lynde place. Mr. Edward Jocelyn and Mr. Moses P. Chase were its first and last teachers. A good history of the several other schools of Salem can be found in the Report of the School Superintendent, A. D. Small, for 1875.

The grammar schools and their principals in Salem, to-day are as follows:—Bentley (for girls), Hannah E. Choate; Bowditch, Frank L. Smith; Holly street, Owen B. Stone; Phillips (for boys), Edwin R. Bigelow; Pickering, Wm. P. Hayward. There are also twelve primary schools and five auxiliary schools, including the evening, and Free Hand and Mechanical drawing schools. In 1697 the income from rent of Baker's Island, the two Misery Islands, and Beverly Ferry, was applied to assist in the support of the grammar school in Salem, in addition to twelve shillings each, paid by the scholars.

Directly in the rear of the Normal and High School buildings, is the Broad street burying ground. This was commenced about 1655 and was called burying hill. Among the many buried here is Capt. George Corwin, the sheriff of Salem in the witchcraft days, who when Giles Corey's tongue was pressed from his mouth, forced it back again with his cane. For the part which he, by virtue of his office, was obliged to take in executing the law upon those condemned for witchcraft, he was severely persecuted by the friends of the deceased, and at the time of his death (1696) so great was the excitement against him, that his friends were unable for a

time to carry his body to the family tomb, and his remains were kept buried in the cellar of his house until the excitement had subsided. Hutchinson's History of Massachusetts mentions him as being in the expedition against Canada, under Sir William Phipps, in 1660.

The northern corner of Chestnut and Summer streets, was used by John Mason from 1661 to 1687, for making bricks, and afterwards by Isaac Stearns for the same purpose. This brick yard was situated near the head of Ruck's creek.¹ What was known as Ruck's Village² was situated between Norman and Creek streets, and east of Summer street. Tradition has it that vessels were built as far up as Chestnut street and launched into the creek.

¹ See page 31.

² See page 34.




SITE OF WILLIAM GRAY'S GARDEN.

(SEE PAGE 122.)

CHAPTER IV.

HOME OF SKELTON.—TOWN HALL AND MARKET.—MONROE'S VISIT.—
—OLD DERBY MANSION.—BROWNE FAMILY.—DERBY FAMILY.—
CONANT'S HOUSE.—WOODBURY ESTATE.—SHIP TAVERN.—MAN-
SION HOUSE.—PALFRAY HOMESTEAD.—KING'S ARM TAVERN.—
DESTRUCTION OF TEA.—SUN TAVERN.—ESSEX HOUSE.—WIL-
LIAM GRAY.—SALEM NEWSPAPERS, PAST AND PRESENT.—POST
OFFICES.—EARLY CUSTOM HOUSES.—SALEM ATHENÆUM.—
AMERICAN ASSOCIATION FOR THE ADVANCEMENT OF SCIENCE.—
CHARTER STREET BURYING GROUND.—OLD CORDUROY ROAD.—
EARLY COMMERCE.—SALEM HOSPITAL.—CATHOLIC CHURCHES.
—SHIP BUILDING.

E now pass through Norman street, cross Washington, and enter Front street. The dwelling house of the Rev. Mr. Skelton, first pastor of the First Church, stood about where the police station now stands. Samuel Skelton was the personal friend and early spiritual guide of Governor Endicott, who experienced religious conviction under his preaching in the old country.

Town Hall stands in the middle of Derby square, north of Front street. It was built in 1816-17. It is 100 feet long, 40 feet wide, two stories high and cost about \$12,000. It was first publicly used upon the occasion of President Monroe's visit to Salem, July 8, 1817. Here he was introduced to our principal men, and to the ladies and gentlemen assembled. On the northern wall, inside this hall, directly over the rostrum, may to-day be seen a large carved medallion head of George Washington, executed by Mr. Samuel McIntire of Salem, from an original

design made by him from life, when Gen. Washington visited Salem. It is said to be a most admirable likeness. This hall, for legitimate municipal purposes, was abandoned when Salem became incorporated as a city, March 23, 1836. The basement and first floor of this building are occupied for a City Market, and the square below it, and between it and Front street, is sometimes called "Market square," because the country teams with their produce for sale assemble here. Nearly every Saturday afternoon and evening, a hundred and fifty or more market teams are gathered in and about this place, presenting a lively and interesting sight. The surroundings of the Town Hall, are hotels, billiard halls, dining and liquor saloons. The old hall in the second story retains much of its original look, and is used for local political rallies, temperance meetings, and like gatherings where economy is considered.

The land occupied by Derby square was comprised in the fine estate of Elias Haskett Derby, the noted merchant. This estate was laid out into fine walks and gardens, and extended from Essex street to a terrace which overhung the river. The mansion upon it, which Mr. Derby completed and occupied but a few months before his death, was one of the most elegant in the town. It was built in 1799, was of wood, three stories in height, and cost \$80,000. It was enriched by a conservatory and a large and valuable library. It occupied the site of the three-story mansard roof house built by the Hon. Samuel Browne, the former owner of the land.

Hon. Samuel Browne was born in 1669 : was the first town treasurer, a representative to the General Court, Judge of the Superior Court, colonel of the Salem regiment, and the greatest merchant of his day in the county of Essex. His estate included the whole of the present Derby square with land both east and west of it. He died in 1731, leaving his house to his son Samuel. Samuel died in 1742, leaving this house to his son William. William also purchased of his cousin, William Burnett Browne, a house on the site of the Bowker Block, afterwards known as the "Sun Tavern." The Browne family was very large and was one of the most respected and influential of all the Salem families previous to the Revolutionary war. They then showed decided preferences for the cause of England, and were reckoned among the staunchest loyalists in Salem.

The above mentioned William was a grandson of Governor Burnett. He was many years a representative of Salem ; was one of the seventeen rescinders in 1768 ; a colonel of the Essex militia ; a Judge of the Superior Court to 1774. During the Revolutionary war he was banished from Salem as a dangerous tory. He took refuge in Boston, and went to England in March, 1776, when the King's troops left Boston. During the course of the war his whole estate was confiscated. The house east of the site of Hale's building was afterwards purchased by Elias Haskett Derby. His was the only property confiscated in Salem. Browne was Governor of Bermuda in 1781-90.

The people of Salem to-day hold in reverence the memory of those merchants who in the last century, laid the foundation of its prosperity. Among them none is remembered with greater respect than Elias Hasket Derby. He was born in Salem, August 16, 1738. None have surpassed him in enterprise, or contributed more to improve the shipping, or extend the commerce of the country. No one has done more to raise up masters and merchants for its guidance. While achieving one of the largest fortunes made in America during the eighteenth century, he had the satisfaction to build up with it the fortunes of his native town. When he died in 1791, his son was numbered as a public merchant. He served as the commodore of the Revolution, seven ships engaged in the West India trade. The war ruined American commerce. During that war, Mr. Derby united with his associates and drew out from Salem 100 armed vessels. At least 65 of the country's vessels were captured by them. Appreciating the importance of speed, Mr. Derby constructed ship-racks, erected masts, and built a class of vessels superior to any made and speed, in any previous building in the country. He opened American trade to St. Petersburg in 1779, and in Canada and Australia soon afterwards.

His brother, Capt. Richard, was a successful ship-builder and merchant from 1771-1811 and in other respects an influential man. He was twice a member of the council which the people are entitled to elect. When Louisbourg was a British town he was the merchant who sold a ship to the British as a

that of the old Spartan. "Find them if you can! take them if you can! they will never be surrendered!"

His widow lived to found the Derby Academy, at Hingham; his eldest son, Richard, was an ardent patriot, and another of his sons, John Derby, was an owner of the ship *Columbia*, which on her second voyage discovered the Columbia river. John Derby also carried to England the first news of the battle of Lexington, and at the close of the war brought home from France, the first news of peace. While most of the rich men of Massachusetts clung to the mother country at the commencement of the war, none of the Derby name followed their example.

Elias Haskett Derby, jr., known during the Revolutionary war as General Derby, was a son of the great merchant, and one of the founders of the East India trade. He was the first importer of Merino sheep, and began the manufacture of American broadcloth during the war of 1812. Ezekiel Hersey Derby, another son, built, owned, and occupied as his winter residence, the western portion of the building now known as "Maynes" block, on Essex street, directly opposite Derby square. He owned the larger portion of "South-fields," now South Salem, and what is now known as the Lafayette House, was his summer residence. A third Elias Haskett Derby, the son of E. Haskett, jr., studied law with Daniel Webster, was president of the Old Colony Railroad, a writer for the leading magazines of the day, was active in promoting the commercial interests of Boston, and an earnest and zealous advocate



SEAL OF THE MASSACHUSETTS BAY COMPANY.

(SEE PAGE 9.)

of the construction of iron-clads during the late civil war. Maynes' block is supposed to cover the spot on which, in 1626, Roger Conant erected the first house in Salem.

The house of John Woodbury, one of the Old Planters, stood just west of Maynes' block, and about opposite Hale's building. Capt. George Corwin, father of Jonathan, purchased the Woodbury estate in 1660, and erected thereon a "fine mansion." It seems as probable that this was the building in which the witchcraft examinations were made, as it is that they took place in the Roger Williams house. Corwin died in 1685, leaving the mansion and a large fortune to his widow and children. Judge Jonathan Corwin¹ was the administrator of his affairs and principal heir. It is not unlikely that the judge during the next seven years, changed his residence from the Roger Williams house, to the "fine mansion" left by his father, leaving the former dwelling-house to his own children. This would have made his residence "near to the court house," as the records declare.

Previous to 1692, John Gedney kept what he called the "Ship Tavern." It was situated on the spot now occupied by the West block. John Stacy was his successor. In 1693 Francis Ellis was allowed to keep the "Ship Tavern," and he was succeeded by Henry Sharpe from Boston. This tavern was the most noted in Salem of the seventeenth century. It was torn down about 1740.

¹ See page 96.

On the site of the noted "Ship Tavern," John Turner, Esq., built a very fine mansion in 1748. Judge Andrew Oliver bought it of Turner, and Capt. Nathaniel West bought it of Oliver. In 1833 it was leased as a tavern, and first opened in that year on the occasion of the visit of President Andrew Jackson to Salem. It was called the Mansion House, and was destroyed by fire about twenty years ago.

Between the West block, nearly opposite Central street, and the head of St. Peter street, was the homestead of Peter Palfray, another of the "Old Planters." This land afterwards became the property of the Browne family, a noted family in the early history of Salem. Since 1675, or thereabout, this vicinity has been noted for its public houses. We find that various writers have, from time to time, mentioned the following taverns as having occupied this spot: Mr. Stacy's tavern, Mr. Pratt's tavern, Mr. Goodhue's tavern, Mr. Robinson's tavern, Benj. Webb's tavern, the King's Arm tavern, the Sun tavern, the Essex Coffee House, the Lafayette Coffee House, and now the Essex House. From the manner in which their location and order of establishment has been given, it is hard to present any further information as correctly as we would wish, but the following cannot be far from the real facts.

East of the "Ship Tavern," between where the present West block and the present Essex House is, William Browne, Esq., in 1652, built a fine mansion. During the Dutch wars a vast sum in New England shillings was hidden in one of the chim-

neys. It was found in 1730, when Col. Benjamin Browne was married. About 1770, William Goodhue occupied this mansion as a tavern. It was called the "King's Arm Tavern." At the commencement of the war feeling against the mother country, the name of this tavern was changed to the "Sun Tavern." Samuel Robinson succeeded Goodhue, and Benjamin Webb succeeded Robinson. Webb was succeeded by his son, Jonathan, who continued here until the estate was purchased by William Gray, the merchant. Mr. Gray had the "Sun Tavern" taken down about 1800, to accommodate his new brick house. After Mr. Gray moved to his new mansion, the "Sun Tavern" was removed to his old mansion which occupied the site of the present Bowker block.

In 1768 the merchants and traders of Salem met at the "King's Arm Tavern," and voted unanimously that during the year 1769 they would not purchase or import any goods from Great Britain, except coal, salt and such articles necessary for the fisheries, nor would they ever again import any tea, glass, paper, or painters' colors, until the acts imposing duties on these colonies were repealed. These duties created great dissatisfaction among the people of this and other ports, and the feeling was made manifest in various ways. In 1774 a small cask of tea sent from Boston, was seized and burned in School street. Tea was, however, smuggled into the town, and used in secret. David Mason had the charge of two chests smuggled in by a colored man. He delivered them over to the boys, who took them to the Common and made a bonfire of them. On the 18th of July,

1776, the feeling was so bitter against the crown that the king's arms, and every sign with any resemblance of it, whether of lion and crown, or of pestle, mortar and crown, etc., together with every sign that belonged to a tory, were taken down, and a general conflagration made of them in King street.

In 1774 a tavern called the "Salem Coffee House" was opened near the St. Peter's Church. The tavern at this time known as the "Ship Tavern," was on the corner of Washington and Church streets, as mentioned on page 73. In 1814 Prince Stetson occupied the elegant mansion of William Gray. It was then called the "Essex Coffee House." Lafayette stopped here when he made his last visit to Salem, and the name of the house was changed to that of the "Lafayette Coffee House." About 1842 it was called the Essex House, and it retains that name to-day. The building has been enlarged and altered from its original appearance. The eastern wing of this building was formerly Mr. Gray's stable. Among our illustrations will be found a little row of buildings, including "Cousins' Bee Hive," which cover the site of William Gray's garden, on the corner of Essex and St. Peter streets.

William Gray was one of Salem's eminent merchants. He was born in Lynn, Massachusetts, June, 1750. He was early apprenticed to a merchant in Salem, and was afterwards in the employ of Capt. Richard Derby. Beginning business for himself, he amassed great wealth, having at one time more than sixty sail of square-rigged vessels on the ocean. The French Revolution created strong differences



HAWTHORNE HOUSE.—(SEE PAGE 143.)

of political feelings in this country. The Republicans favored the Revolution, and were called Jacobins. The Federalists opposed it. When the excesses of the revolutionists had thrown a degree of odium upon their supporters here, the Republicans were stigmatized by their opponents as Democrats. They adopted the name, and have since held it as the emblem of their advocacy of the people's rights. The Federalists, losing the popularity of their name, afterwards adopted the name of Republicans. William Gray belonged to the latter party, and served as State Senator. In 1808 he took sides with Jefferson, that "the embargo act was a constitutional measure." For this the Federalists opposed him so bitterly, that he removed to Boston in 1809. He was made Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts the following year. It might be of interest to state that political feeling in those days ran exceedingly high, and appeared in the pulpit as well as the press. In 1811 the parties in Salem were so opposed to each other, that it took two days and a half to fill the more important town offices.

The newspaper offices of Salem are all situated on Essex street, within a short distance of each other. The "Salem Gazette" is the oldest paper in the city, and ranks among the oldest in the country. It was first published as the "Salem Mercury," October 14, 1786, by John Dabney and Thomas C. Cushing. It took the name of "Salem Gazette" January 5, 1790, and was first issued as a semi-weekly, June 3, 1794, and has continued as such to the present time. It is published every Tuesday

and Friday morning. Its publishers have been John Dabney, Thomas C. Cushing, William Carlton, Caleb Cushing, Ferdinand Andrews, Caleb Foote and William Browne, jr. Caleb Foote and N. A. Horton are its present publishers. They also print the "Essex County Mercury," started as the "Salem Mercury," June 8, 1831. It is made up wholly of the general reading matter of the Gazette, and is published every Wednesday. The Gazette has always decidedly manifested the principles of the Federalist and, its offsprings, the Whig and present Republican parties. Its office is in Hale's building.

Several weekly papers of short duration, were published in Salem previous to the publication of the present Gazette, the first by Samuel Hall, in 1768. In 1781, "The Salem Gazette and General Advertiser," was published by a woman named Mary Crouch.

The "Salem Register" was first published May 12, 1800, by William Carlton, as "The Impartial Register." It was next called "The Salem Impartial Register;" subsequently "The Salem Register;" later "The Essex Register," and then again "The Salem Register," which name it retains to-day. On the death of Mr. Carlton the paper was continued in the interests of his widow, Elizabeth Carlton, until her death, when it was "published for the proprietors." Haven Poole and Warwick Palfray, jr., next became owners of the paper. Mr. Poole died in 1811, and Mr. Palfray was sole proprietor until 1835. John Chapman then became associated with him. Mr. Palfray died in 1838, when his son,

Charles W. Palfray, became his successor. Mr. Chapman died in 1873. Mr. Eben N. Walton succeeded him, and Messrs. Palfray & Walton are the present publishers. It is a fact worthy of note that all of the previous publishers of the Register, "died in the harness." Charles W. Palfray is a lineal descendant of Peter Palfray. His father, Warwick, jr., was a member of the first three common councils of the city, a representative, and a state senator. The Register is published every Monday and Thursday morning, at 193 Essex street, corner of Central street. It has been associated in politics with the old Republican, Whig, and the present Republican parties.

The "Salem Observer" was first published January 6, 1823, by William and Stephen B. Ives. January 1, 1837, George W. Pease was admitted into the partnership. Stephen B. Ives withdrew from the firm in 1844. William Ives withdrew a few years ago, and Horace S. Traill associated himself with Mr. Pease. A year or two ago, Francis A. Fielding, a son-in-law of the senior member, was admitted into the firm, which now bears the name of Pease, Traill & Fielding. Gilbert L. Streeter, Esq., has for several years been associated with the paper as its chief editor. The Observer is supposed to be neutral in politics, but it has always shown unmistakable signs of a strong republican tendency. It is published every Saturday from its office in the Stearns' building, corner of Washington and Essex streets.

The "Salem Post and County Advertiser" was first published January 1, 1873, by Charles H. Webber

and Frederick B. Browning, as the "Salem City Post." Mr. Browning retired after a service of six weeks. Mr. Webber continued the publication alone until the close of that year, when he dropped the word "City" from the name of the paper, and added the name of "County Advertiser," because of its extensive county circulation, and associated with him his brother, Putnam Webber, under the firm title of Webber Brothers. Putnam Webber retired from the paper in May, 1875. Since then C. H. Webber has been its editor and proprietor, with assistance from Winfield S. Nevins and William D. Dennis. The Post is published every Wednesday morning from Hale's building, 223 Essex street. In politics it is independently Democratic.

"Peabody's Fireside Favorite" is a literary paper, published monthly by John P. Peabody from his store under the First Church. It was established in 1868 as "The Hoop Skirt," and was then circulated gratuitously as an advertising sheet. It was afterwards increased to double its proportions, changed from a folio to a quarto form and made a subscription paper.

"Conrad's Pavilion" and "The Trades' Bulletin," are advertising sheets circulated gratuitously. The former, established about 1869, is published at Conrad's Pavilion, opposite the Essex house, and the latter, established in 1877, at Hutchinson's printing office, corner of Washington and Essex streets. A large number of other papers of various kinds, and for a variety of purposes, have been published in Salem from time to time. The most successful of

them lived but a few years. The following are the names of some of the papers now extinct:—

The Essex Gazette	1768-75.
The Salem Gazette and Newbury and Marblehead Advertiser	1774.
The American Gazette or Constitu- tional Journal	1776.
The Salem Chronicle and Essex Adver- tiser	1786.
The Salem Gazette	1781-85.
Weekly Visitant	1806.
The Friend	1807.
The Fool	1808.
The Barber Shop	1809.
Salem Courier	1828.
The Hive	1828-9.
Ladies Miscellany	1829.
The Commercial Advertiser	1832-41.
Salem Advertiser	1841-9.
Saturday Evening Bulletin	1833.
The Land Mark	1834-6.
The Lighthouse	1835.
Essex County Democrat	1838.
The Harrisonian	1840.
The Whig	1840.
The Locomotive	1842-3.
Voice around the Jail	1843.
Essex County Reformer	1844.
The Salem Advocate	1856-61.
The Essex Statesman	1863-8.
The Whirlwind	1869-70.

Hale's building previously spoken of, stands next east of the First Church edifice. It is four stories high, has an iron front, painted white, and is one of the finest business buildings in the city. In the



ROOM IN WHICH HAWTHORNE WAS BORN.

(SEE PAGE 143.)

rear of Hale's building stands an ancient house that formerly occupied its site. This house was built by Col. William Browne in 1763, for his mother; later it was sold to, and occupied by, Mr. Samuel Gray, merchant. To accommodate the building of this house a very old house was torn down, in which at one time the post-office was located, kept by Lydia Hill and Molly Gill. Before the post-office, "the notable Abigail Allen" kept school in this house. It is evident that a post-office was established in Salem as early as 1693, when a general office was established in Boston. The postage from Boston to Salem was four pence. Postmen were then employed to carry letters from place to place. Among the most notable of the postmen was John Noble, who rode between Boston and Portsmouth. The article in which he used to carry letters is deposited in the Portsmouth Athenæum. "It is made of tin, and is only four inches wide, four inches high, and ten inches long; about double the size of a common cartridge box." What a contrast between the facilities of the present day. The post-offices in Salem during the past century have been located as follows: 1775 at what is now 100 Washington street; 1779 at what is now 290 Essex street; 1792 at the corner of Essex and Washington streets; 1800 at the corner of Essex and Central streets; 1801 at the foot of Central street, where Phoenix building now is; next at what is now the Bowker-place; 1815 in the Franklin building; 1817 at the corner of Washington and Essex streets; 1818 at the corner of Essex and St. Peter streets; in 1830 at the East India

Marine building, where it remained until removed to its present position in the Asiatic building. Gen. George H. Pierson is post-master.

Central street was early known as Hanover street ; subsequently as Market street. The market-house was at one time on this thoroughfare. It was built in 1793. Its location was described that same year, by the late Col. Benjamin Pickman,¹ as follows : "Opposite to the tavern kept by Capt. Benjamin Webb,² and on the water, at about 300 yards from Webb's tavern, due south, is a market begun ; the subscribers forty. The market was raised on the 24th October, 1793."

The market-house was a wooden building, later known as Concert-Hall building, situated on the site of the present Phoenix building. It was destroyed in the great "Front street" fire of 1844.

In 1789 the Custom House was on the eastern side of Central street. It stood where the First National, and the Mercantile banks now are. Major Joseph Hiller was the collector. In 1805, Col. William R. Lee was collector, and the Custom House was removed to the "Central building" now standing on the western corner of Essex and Central streets. The eagle and shield which ornamented this Custom House building remains to-day, and may be seen on the Central street side. The books of the Social and Philosophical libraries, and of the Salem Athenæum, were at one time deposited in this building.

¹ "Essex Hist. Col.," Vol. 6, 1864, p. 109.

² Sun Tavern, see p. 121.

The Salem Athenæum was incorporated in 1810. Its books at the present time numbering 16,000 volumes, are deposited in Plummer Hall. The present board of officers of this institution are, president, William Mack; treasurer, Henry J. Cross; clerk of the Corporation, Henry Wheatland; librarian, Elizabeth H. Smith.

The American Association for the Advancement of Science, of which Prof. F. W. Putnam, of Cambridge (formerly of Salem), is permanent secretary, has its headquarters in the Mercantile Bank building, where its library and other valuable publications are kept.

The foot of Central street is somewhat noted as a hay-market. The farmers for years past, from the neighboring towns, have gathered here with their loads of hay for sale.

On the southern side of Charter street is the oldest burying-ground in Salem. It was occupied before 1637. Among others buried here, are Hiliard Veren, Martha, wife of Giles Corey, Richard Derby, Warwick Palfray, Hon. Benjamin Lynde, Hon. William Browne, Simon Forrester and Deliverance Parkman. The oldest inscription that can be deciphered is dated 1650.

Liberty street, which extends from Essex to Derby streets, on the east side of the burying-ground, was called in 1770, Burying-point lane. Felt says: "In 1799 Neptune and Liberty streets were paved." Neptune was that portion of Charter from Derby to Elm streets. Charter street then extended only from Liberty to Central. It is also an old paved street.



SALEM COMMON.—(SEE PAGE 151.)

That portion of Derby street from Central street to Fabens' wharf was formerly Fish street; that portion from Fabens' wharf to Union street was Water street. Fish and Water streets, and the eastern end of Front street, once formed a corduroy road, built along the shore. The land has all been filled in above it. A cove extended in where the Phoenix building is to about the middle of the square in front of it. Fabens' wharf was where William Gray carried on his commercial business. The present office of the Messrs. Fabens¹ is the same as occupied by Mr. Gray, and the furniture is that which was used by him when recognized as one of the princely merchants of Salem. These merchants were spoken of by Nathaniel Hawthorne, in his famous romance, the "Scarlet Letter," as "old King Derby, old Billy Gray, old Simon Forrester, and many another magnate in his day, whose powdered head, however, was scarcely in the tomb, before his mountain-pile of wealth began to dwindle." In these early days, when heavy drays lumbered over the cobble-stones of Charter, Liberty and Derby streets, cargoes of tea were disposed of on Essex street—several, sometimes, in a week; merchants from New York and Philadelphia came here to buy; five India-men coming up the harbor in a day was no rare sight, and yet one which would set the whole town on tip-toe for the owners' signals, for greetings after a long voyage, for the stories of foreign lands, for the un-

¹ Since the above was written the Messrs. Fabens have removed to Boston.

folding of odd little ventures and curious presents ; these scenes with the more heroic incidents of shipwreck, piracy and war, make the past of Salem a dramatic picture.

The commercial history of Salem is yet to be written. The task is not ours. Suffice for us to note that from the earliest times, we were of necessity a maritime people, and no town has contributed so much to the business and social pre-eminence of Boston and New York, or won so many high honors upon the billows, as Salem. Our seamen have traversed every ocean and glorified the name of Salem by their deeds of daring and generous heroism. Many an island and sunken rock in our harbor have been the instruments of midnight shipwrecks, and sent many a hardy sailor to a watery grave even in sight of his home. Our merchants have gathered in the fruits of all climates, the wealth of every land.

In the Revolutionary struggle Salem had large interests on the ocean. Still she hesitated not at the risk. In March, 1775, she was the first to unfold the old "pine tree" standard of liberty to the eyes of the enemy. The schooner "Hannah" of Beverly was the first commissioned privateer of the revolution. The ship "Grand Turk" in 1786, was the first from New England — and perhaps the first from America — to double the Cape for Canton. The first American ship to import a cargo of tea, and the first to show the "stars and stripes" on the coast of Sumatra and Jamaica, was from Salem. "Cleopatra's barge," a Salem ship termed "a floating palace," because of her "beauty, luxury and magnificence,"

excited wonder even in Genoa. The first Salem vessel that circumnavigated the globe was the ship "Minerva," owned by Clifford Crowninshield and Nathaniel West. The Madagascar, Zanzibar and Sumatra trades, as well as that on the west coast of Africa, commenced in Salem.

That portion of Charter street from Liberty to Elm streets, was formerly known as Vine street. The Salem Hospital is situated on its southern side. This institution was organized April 7, 1873. The need of it had long been felt. Its medical staff is composed of the allopathist physicians of Salem. It was founded on a fund contributed by John Bertram and others of Salem. Mr. Bertram is to-day one of the oldest and most successful merchants of this city, and the only one of the old merchants of Salem who now makes his headquarters here.

South-east of the Salem Hospital, on Derby street, stands the noted warehouses of Capt. Joseph Peabody, in which his immense amount of imported silks were stored awaiting a market.

East of the hospital, at the foot of Walnut street, and fronting Charter street, stands the Church of the Immaculate Conception (Roman Catholic). There are two Catholic churches and societies in Salem whose histories are so intimately connected that it is better to present them together here. A third society, the French, is mentioned elsewhere. Some say that mass was first offered in the Court House, by Rev. John Thayer, and others that it was offered by the Abbe de la Poterie, in a small house on the site of the Franklin building. In

either case it must have been at the close of the last century that the first mass was celebrated in Salem. Catholic services were held in Salem, in the early part of the present century, at private residences. These early services were doubtless held under the guidance of priests who travelled from Boston to the Penobscot river, holding meetings at the latter place with the Indians. It is said that the Right Rev. Bishop De Cheverus, then of Boston, used to walk from that city to Salem to perform his missionary work here. About 1810, Simon Forrester, an Irishman by birth, and one of Salem's most successful merchants, deeded through the Marblehead Bank to the Catholics of Salem, in the bishop's name, the land on the northern corner of Mall and Bridge streets, for the purpose of building a church edifice thereon, with the proviso that it should be held by the Catholics for religious purposes forever. This land was the western end of an estate owned by him, which extended from Brown to Bridge streets. In 1820 a small wooden structure was erected, and the church was styled the St. Mary's. In 1837 or 8, a Sabbath School was organized, and the basement of the building was put in order for its accommodation. At this time there were not over 150 Catholics attending church in this city, and the number included those in the adjacent towns of Beverly, Peabody, Danvers, Ipswich, etc. In each of these towns there is now a Catholic church.

About 1842, the house was enlarged, and two wings with galleries were added, and the first Catholic (or parochial) school in this city was established.



PLUMMER HALL.

(SEE PAGE 157.)

It was taught in the basement of this building for two years by Mr. Daniel O'Donnell, one of our oldest adopted citizens. The school numbered 105 pupils—male and female. The pastors of St. Mary's Church were Reverend Fathers Mahoney, Wiley (a convert from Protestantism), Brady, Strain, O'Flaherty and Conway.

During the pastorate of Father Conway, the Catholics increased in such numbers that the old St. Mary's building could not accommodate them. Land was therefore purchased on the north side of Federal street, between Dean and Boston streets, and about 1849, the present St. James' Church edifice was built, and this upper parish organized. Father Conway was assisted by the Rev. Father Shahan, and the St. Mary's Church was continued until the building of the present Church of the Immaculate Conception, about 1857. This advancement was prosecuted through the indefatigable zeal of Father Conway, who died before its completion. The pastors of the St. James' Church have been Reverend Fathers Shahan and Daly. The present pastor is Rev. J. J. Gray. The Rev. Father Hartney, who died quite suddenly when on a visit to Worcester, and the present, Rev. William Halley, have been the only pastors of the Church of the Immaculate Conception. The old St. Mary's church building, which had for several years remained unoccupied, was recently demolished.

During the Revolutionary period, the feeling in this part of the country was as strong against the Catholics, or Irish people, as it had previously been

against the Quakers, with this exception, that a law prevented the citizens from harboring a Quaker, while a strong prejudice against the Irish people, operated against their finding proper boarding houses or homes. With the advent of railroads, came the great increase of "the foreign element," as the Irishmen were termed, their strong, hardy, physical natures being most essential in the construction of the road-beds. The Irish people now form a large and useful portion of our great community.

Where Elm street and the foot of Charter street is was formerly a cove. The water flowed nearly up to Essex street. On the eastern side of Elm street was a noted ship-yard. From here to Hardy street, ship-building was carried on quite extensively from 1692 to 1700. Ship-building was commenced in Salem very soon after its settlement. In 1686 a ship of 120 tons burthen was built on the Marblehead side of Salem harbor. She went to the West Indies in 1688, with a cargo of dry fish and strong liquors, and returned after seven months with a cargo of cotton, tobacco and negroes. These negroes were the first slaves imported at Salem from that quarter, of which there is any record. From 1635 to 1690 Richard Hollingsworth had built ships on the "Neck," so called, near what is now the Rowell house. Ships were also built on North river, at the upper end of Goodhue street. Ebenezer Mann built at this place from 1788 to 1800, six ships, fifteen brigs, two barques and eighteen schooners, ranging from 50 to 214 tons; and Christopher Turner built at the same place six ships, seven brigs

and five schooners, ranging from 78 to 296 tons, making fifty-nine vessels in all built on what is now Goodhue street near Frye's mills. Hawkes' ship-yard was next easterly to Derby wharf. Briggs' yard was where Clark's wood wharf now is in South Salem. Jenks' yard was a little nearer Lafayette street. In these latter yards, from 1791 to 1843, there were sixty-one vessels built in all, ranging from 96 to 426 tons. The ship "Grand Turk" was built and launched next east of the store occupied by Isaac P. Foster, on Derby street, and her bowsprit projected over the street. The ship "George," one of the most noted and successful Salem ships, was built at Briggs' yard by an association of carpenters. She was modeled by Christopher Turner, and was set up for a privateer, but before completion was purchased by Capt. Joseph Peabody for the merchant service, and named for his son George, who now lives on the corner of Mall and Brown streets, on the estate formerly owned and occupied by John Forrester, the merchant, and son of Simon.

These ship-yards were long noted for the many fine specimens of naval architecture constructed therein and sent to all parts of the globe. The frigate "Essex," mounting thirty-two guns, was built by Enos Briggs, on the south side of Winter Island, about where the United States lightkeeper's cottage now stands.



THE FIRST CHURCH (EXTERIOR).

(SEE PAGE 161.)

CHAPTER V.

BIRTHPLACE OF NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE.—SKETCH OF HAWTHORNE.—SAILORS' BETHEL.—CALVARY BAPTIST CHURCH.—SALEM MARINE SOCIETY.—MILITARY OF SALEM, PAST AND PRESENT.—GEN. LANDER.—SALEM COMMON.—EARLY MODES OF PUNISHMENT.—EAST CHURCH.—BIRTHPLACE OF NATHANIEL BOWDITCH.—SKETCH OF BOWDITCH.—ANN PUDEATOR.—CAPT. JOSEPH WHITE.—PLUMMER HALL.—ESSEX INSTITUTE.—DR. WHEATLAND.—MISS CAROLINE PLUMMER.—ESSEX SOUTH DISTRICT MEDICAL SOCIETY.—DR. REED.—BIRTHPLACE OF WILLIAM HICKLING PRESCOTT.—CAPT. JOSEPH PEABODY.—OLD FIRST MEETING HOUSE.—COL. FRANCIS PEABODY.—GOV. BRADSTREET.—AMERICA'S FIRST POST.—BOWKER BLOCK.—JUDGE OLIVER.—EAST INDIA MARINE HALL.—PICKMAN HOUSE.—ST. PETER'S CHURCH.—PHILIP ENGLISH.—CENTRAL BAPTIST CHURCH.—JUTTING UPPER STORY HOUSE.—COUNTY JAIL.—HOWARD STREET BURYING GROUND.—OLD JAIL.—UNIVERSALIST CHURCH.—FIRE DEPARTMENT.—NORTH BRIDGE.—LESLIE'S RETREAT.

IUST east of Elm street, at 21 Union street, is the birthplace of Nathaniel Hawthorne, Salem's great literary genius. Union street is an humble thoroughfare extending from Essex to Derby streets. The buildings upon it are mostly common-place wooden houses. No. 21 is distinguished from the rest by a slight tinge of the picturesque. It is a weather-beaten structure, built at least a century ago; two stories high with a gambrel roof and one monstrous chimney in the middle almost as large as a wooden cupola. The front door is in the centre, and opens into a little entry-way with a square room on each side and a steep, narrow stairway to the rooms above. The

house is very low-studded. We present a fine picture of it elsewhere; also a picture of the room in which Hawthorne was born. It was in the northeast corner, a small room with an open fire-place for a wood fire. Whatever the place might have been in Hawthorne's infancy it certainly is not very attractive now, the surroundings being bare and forbidding. Hawthorne was born in this house July 4, 1804, and four years later, on the death of his father in the West Indies, his mother went to live with her father, Mr. Manning, at No. 10 Herbert street. In this latter place Hawthorne's boyhood and much of his manhood was spent. Herbert street is next east of Union street, and the Manning mansion is directly in the rear of 21 Union street, so that the back-yards of the two houses used to join. Herbert street is a much more picturesque street than its neighbor, as it preserves much of the old Salem architecture—queer and quaint enough now, for all the ancient, weather-beaten, gambrel-roofed and gabled-houses have seen far better days. The old Manning house is a great roomy structure, but black and dilapidated now, comfortable as it must have been when the young author lived there with his grandfather and his widowed mother. Mr. Richard C. Manning, of Salem, has an interesting memento of Hawthorne—his cousin—in the shape of a pane of glass in which Hawthorne cut, with a diamond ring, his name and the date on which he wrote it. Mr. Manning found this in one of the windows of his grandfather's house and removed it for safe keeping. Hawthorne's works rank among

the highest in American literature. His "Scarlet Letter," a powerful romance of early New England life, in the introduction of which he gave a graphic and satirical sketch of the decayed old Salem Custom House and its venerable inmates, greatly enhanced his reputation. Among his other popular works might be mentioned "Twice Told Tales," "Mosses from an Old Manse," "The House of Seven Gables," "The Blithedale Romance," "Tanglewood Tales," "The Marble Faun," etc. He served as weigher and gauger at the Boston Custom House in 1841, and was surveyor of the Port of Salem, 1846-50. He lived quite a while at Concord, Mass., and died at Plymouth, N. H., 1864.

Nearly opposite the Hawthorne house on Herbert street, is an old chapel known as "The Bethel." It was built in the commercial days of Salem for the accommodation of the sailors at this port. A few years ago it was purchased by the Catholics, and is to-day used exclusively by the French residents as a place of worship. Its present pastor is the Rev. George Talbot.

At the head of Herbert street, fronting on Essex, is the Calvary Baptist Church edifice. This church was organized in October, 1870, by ninety members who had received dismissal from the Central Baptist Church. Their purpose was the formation of a new church, the distinctive characteristics of which were, that the house of God should be free to all without the sale or letting of pews; or the granting to a worldly proprietorship a vote on any interest pertaining to the church. This church was "recog-

nized," March 7, 1871, by appropriate services in Mechanic Hall. Here the church worshipped until February, 1873, when it removed to the Bethel on Herbert street. During that year the present house was built on land presented to the society by Mrs. John Dwyer. It was dedicated November 17. The cost of the building was \$10,000. March 17, 1874, the church became a corporate body under the General Statutes of Massachusetts. Its pastors have been Rev. S. Hartwell Pratt and Rev. D. Henry Taylor. Rev. Wm. A. Keese, is the present pastor. Rev. E. B. Andrews, now president of Denison University, Ohio, officiated over this church during the darkest period of its history, though never its pastor, and won the respect, gratitude and love of all its members.

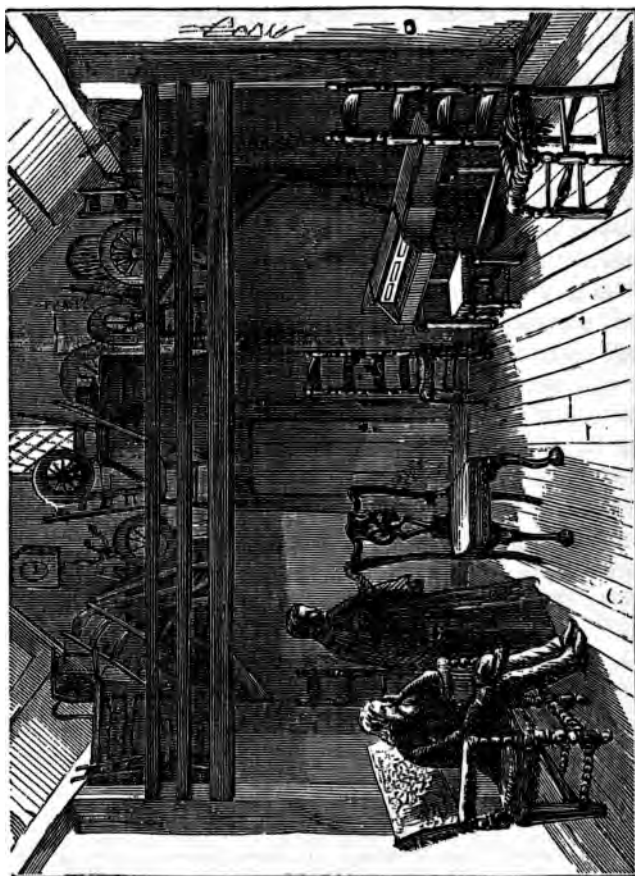
On the eastern corner of Newbury and Essex streets, stands the Franklin building, bequeathed to the Salem Marine Society by Thomas Perkins, merchant, together with a fund of \$15,000. The Salem Marine Society was instituted 1766. Incorporated, 1772. It is composed of masters and owners of vessels. Its object is to improve navigation on our coast, and relieve the poor among its members, and the families of those who need such assistance. The Franklin building has three times been destroyed by fire and as often rebuilt. The armories of the Salem Independent Cadets and of the Salem Light Infantry, Co. K, 8th Mass. Regt., occupy its third story. The history of the military of Salem from the earliest days would be one of great interest. We shall attempt but a brief mention.

For nearly a century and a half from the days of Endicott, the services of our soldiers were engaged against the hostile tribes of Indians that inhabited the territory of the present New England states. The monotony of the early style of warfare was sometimes varied in struggles with the Dutch, or the French, who were leagued with the Indians to destroy the English. Every man who could carry a gun was liable at a moment's notice to be called into service. In 1635, as a means of having musket balls abundant, they were allowed to pass current among the people; each ball passed for a farthing. In 1645 the boys from ten to sixteen years of age were exercised with small guns and half pikes, and also with bows and arrows, thus providing for emergencies in case there should be a scarcity of powder.

The Revolutionary war found our people experienced in scenes of armed hostility, and they sprang to the call of liberty with alacrity and courage. Companies of minute-men and sea-board defenders were organized, and 300 men under Col. Pickering marched for the scenes of Bunker Hill, from Salem, but arrived too late to be of service. Benjamin Pierce of Salem was killed by the British at the battle of Lexington. A few from Salem were in the engagement at Bunker Hill, among whom was Lieut. Benjamin West, killed in the trenches while bravely defending his post. On nearly every field of battle in this war, Salem was represented by patriots tried and true. In 1725 Salem had five companies of foot, one of horse, besides the men at the fort. The first regiment was mustered here under William Brown, in

1774. This regiment was in the interest of His Majesty. Later it was enlisted in the cause of American liberty, under the command of Timothy Pickering. The first uniformed company appeared in 1776. Joseph Sprague was captain, and Joseph Hiller, lieutenant. They wore "a short green coat with gold trimming, cap of black beaver with ostrich feather and similar trimming; under dress white with black gaiters, and ruffles over the hands." This company soon disbanded. The Cadet Company was formed in 1786, Stephen Abbot, commander. They at first turned out in a uniform of scarlet and white. Its present commander is Lieut. Col. Samuel Dalton. John Page commanded a company here in 1786, uniformed in "rifle-coats and overalls." In 1787 Zadock Buflington commanded an artillery company. The uniform was scarlet and black. At this time there was an entire regiment of soldiers in Salem, known as the "Salem Regiment." The Light Infantry was formed in 1805. Its first commander was Capt. John Saunders. Its present commander is Capt. Jonathan Osborne. The Mechanic Light Infantry was formed in 1807. Its first commander was Capt. Perley Putnam. Its present commander is Capt. James Leonard. Among the other Salem companies of the past, worthy of mention here, were the Essex Hussars, Essex Guards, the City Guards, and the Salem Artillery. Salem furnished in the late war of the Rebellion about 3200 men for the army and navy, 230 of whom were killed or died.

Conspicuous among the martyrs of the late war was Gen. Frederick W. Lander, born in Salem December



OLD FIRST CHURCH (INTERIOR). — (SEE PAGE 164.)

17, 1822. As a boy he was remarkable for intrepidity, love of adventure, and skill in manly exercises. He studied civil engineering, and before the war made important explorations across the continent. He also made surveys to determine the practicability of a railroad route to the Pacific. He afterward surveyed the great overland wagon route. While engaged in this latter work, in 1858, his party of seventy men were attacked by the Pah-Ute Indians, whom they repulsed. In the civil war Gen. Lander was first employed on important secret missions in the southern states; he then served as a volunteer aid on Gen. McClellan's staff, and participated with great credit in the capture of Philippi, and in the battle of Rich Mountain. Hearing of the disaster at Ball's Bluff, he hastened to Edward's Ferry, which he held with a single company of sharpshooters, but was severely wounded in the leg. January 5, 1862, at Hancock, he repulsed a greatly superior Confederate force, which besieged the town. He particularly distinguished himself by a brilliant dash upon the enemy at Blooming Gap the next month, for which he received a special letter of thanks from the secretary of war. Increasing ill-health, largely occasioned by his wound, compelled him to apply for temporary relief from military duty, but while preparing an attack on the enemy in March, 1862, he died suddenly of congestion of the lungs. In 1860, Gen. Lander was married to Miss Davenport, the distinguished actress. Louisa Lander of Salem, the celebrated sculptor, is a sister to the general.

The Salem Common, situated north and north-east

of the Franklin building, has something of a history. It was early known as the town swamp, and Essex street was on the edge of the swamp. The land on the north-west and western parts of the swamp was all that was of value then. Col. John Higginson's estate occupied the site of the Franklin building. The Rev. John Higginson had an estate on the north of the swamp. Previous to 1714 there were occasional disputes between the cottagers and the commoners as to their rights to the swamp. These disputes were settled in November of that year, and it was voted by the commoners that the "spot where the trainings are generally kept before Nathaniel Higginson's house, shall be forever as a training field for the use of Salem." From an article by the late Benjamin F. Browne, regarding this spot,¹ we learn that at the beginning of the present century the Common was unenclosed, and horses, cattle, ducks, geese, hens and stray pigs had free range upon it. There were five small ponds here and several hillocks. The largest of these ponds was called Flag pond; the others were Southwick's, Mason's, Cheever's and Lang's ponds. A school-house stood then near the south edge of the Common, nearly opposite Mrs. George West's present house on Forrester street. Near the school-house were the artillery gun-house and the engine-house. In 1803 a bathing-house was erected south of the Common, and what is now Forrester street was called Bath street. On the east and north of the

¹ Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. iv, p. 2.

Common were tan-yards, bark-mills, rope-walks and bake-shops. At about this period, Gen. Gideon Foster, with other influential gentlemen, undertook to instil new life into the militia of Salem, which had been for some years in a disorganized state and destitute of officers. There were then six companies in town. Elias Haskett Derby was elected colonel in command of them, and they were otherwise well officered. The reorganization of the militia led to the levelling of the Common and the filling up of the ponds, etc. The required amount of money was raised by subscription and the work was completed in the spring of 1801. The whole was enclosed with a railing of oak, and on each side of the walks a row of poplar trees were planted. Fifteen years later, however, these trees were supplanted by elms. The Common was then called Washington square, which is its proper name to-day.

Among the early modes of punishment in Salem we find that criminals were tied to whipping-posts, and received upon their bare backs a certain number of lashes with a raw-hide, "well laid on;" others were compelled to sit in stocks a certain number of hours, or stand with their neck and wrists fastened in a pillory, before the public gaze. These whipping-posts, stocks and pillories, in the last century, were situated on the Common; they were afterwards removed to the rear of the Court House, at the northern end of Washington street. Felt says the last time the pillory was used here was in 1801, in front of the Court House. The criminal also had one of his ears cropped for forgery.

In 1769, Thomas Row and Robert Wood, for giving information against a vessel in our harbor to His Majesty's officers, were seized and carried to a tree, which was termed the "Liberty tree," on the Common, and there tarred and feathered. They were then set in a cart, with the word "Informer," placarded upon their breast and back, and led through the streets, preceded by a crowd. A live goose was also repeatedly thrown at them. At the end of Main street, the throng opened to the right and left and bade them leave the town. They went to Boston and complained of the treatment to the Crown officers, who petitioned the Governor to bring the Salem rioters to justice.

Just north-east of the Common on Brown street, stands the fine Second Church edifice. From its location it is properly known as the East Church. It is the oldest branch, within Salem limits, of the First Church, and was organized in 1718. Its first edifice was situated on the corner of Essex and Hardy streets, and there was a parish line, which cannot now be determined, dividing the people of the two societies territorially. The first three ministers were of the Calvinistic type; the sermon at the ordination of the first minister being preached by the famous Cotton Mather, of Boston, the most noted of early New England divines. In 1785, under the lead of the then junior pastor, Rev. William Bentley, this church appears to have become unanimously Unitarian, and was undoubtedly the first church in America to assume that doctrinal ground. The present church edifice was dedicated January 1, 1846, when it



EAST INDIA MARINE HALL.—(SEE PAGE 106.)

was regarded as the finest specimen of church architecture in the state. In its history of one hundred and fifty-six years, it has had but seven pastors, with an average pastorate of over twenty-two years. They were as follows:—Robert Staunton, William Jennison, James Diman, William Bentley, James Flint, and Dexter Clapp. Rev. Samuel C. Beane is the present pastor. Bentley was minister, politician and scholar. For many years he edited the "Essex (now Salem) Register," when it championed the cause of the old Republican, or Democratic party. He also wrote a historical sketch of Salem, in the "Historical Collections," Vol. VI. He was born in Boston, 1759, and died in Salem, 1819.

Just north-west of the East Church edifice stands the house in which Nathaniel Bowditch was born. It was moved to the rear, a few years since, on what is known as Kimball Court, to make room for the Kimball house, which now occupies its former site. The house is of a commanding style of architecture, with massive pillars extending from a large piazza up to the roof. Situated, as the building now is, in such a retired spot, many residents of Salem even, are ignorant of its existence.

Nathaniel Bowditch, the great mathematician and astronomer, was born in Salem, March 26, 1773. During the Revolution, while but a child, his parents removed to Peabody. He died in Boston, March 16, 1838. The poverty of his parents occasioned his withdrawal from school at the age of ten years, and after an apprenticeship in a ship-chandler's shop until he was twenty-one, he spent nine years in a

seafaring life, attaining the rank of master. He was president of the Marine Insurance Company in this city from 1804 to 1823, when he became actuary of the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company, in Boston. By his extraordinary genius and industry, he made great acquisitions in knowledge, mastered many languages, and did more for the reputation of his country among men of science abroad, than has been done by any other man, except, perhaps, Dr. Franklin. While engaged as a supercargo in 1800, he published his well known "Practical Navigator," still a standard work of great utility and value. His fame as a man of science will principally rest on his Commentary on the *Mecanique Céleste* of La Place, of which he made the first entire translation. He contributed many valuable papers to "The Memoirs of the American Academy," and an article on modern astronomy to Vol. 20, "North American Review." At his death he was a member of the principal scientific societies of Europe. He twice had a seat in the executive council of Massachusetts. His eldest son, Nathaniel Ingersol Bowditch, also a native of Salem, was a conveyancer and historical writer. This son was noted for accuracy and thoroughness. A proof of his industry is found, among other things, in his fifty-five folio volumes of land titles, containing nearly 30,000 pages, together with plans and maps.

Newbury street, in the witchcraft days, was known as Salem street. Ann Pudeator, one of the victims of that terrible delusion, lived then on the corner of this and Essex streets, opposite the Franklin build-

ing. Samuel Pickwick, in his deposition against this woman supposed that while coming up Salem street he saw Mistress Pudeator one evening sailing through the air to her house. Ann Putnam clenched the story by asserting, under oath, that Ann Pudeator told her that she did *fly* by a man in the night into her house. In spite of her supernatural powers, as testified by them, this poor woman could not fly from her cruel fate.

On the northern side of Essex street just west of Newbury street, is the house in which Capt. Joseph White lived and died. Capt. White was the victim of the Knapp and Crowninshield tragedy. William Gedney, a high sheriff of Essex county, lived in the house which preceded the White house.

We have now arrived at Plummer Hall, the quarters of the Essex Institute, the most eminent institution in the county of Essex. The Essex Institute is favorably known throughout the scientific world. It was formed by the union of the Essex Historical and the Essex Natural History societies. The former of these societies was organized in June, 1821. The venerable and learned Dr. E. Augustus Holyoke, then near his one hundredth birthday, was its first president.

The latter of these societies was organized in December, 1833; Dr. A. Nichols, of Danvers, was its first president.

The union was effected in January, 1848, when the Institute was organized. It consists of three departments:—the Historical, having for its object the collection and preservation of whatever relates

to the geography, antiquities, civil and ecclesiastical history of Essex county in Massachusetts; the Natural History, for the formation of a cabinet of natural productions in general, and more particularly of those of the county, and for a library of standard works on the natural sciences; the Horticultural, for promoting a taste for the cultivation of choice fruits and flowers, and also for collecting works on horticulture and agriculture in connection with the general library.

The library contains about 28,000 volumes, comprising numerous files of newspapers, public documents, local histories, etc.; also the transactions or collections of various historical, agricultural, scientific and other societies; besides many valuable works illustrative of the natural sciences; several thousand pamphlets (exclusive of duplicates), political, historical, educational, etc., unbound, arranged according to subjects. These have principally been obtained by donations or exchanges.

The scientific collections have been placed in the East India Marine Hall, and in a number of the classes of the animal kingdom, the collections are inferior to but one or two others in the country. The section of ethnology contains about 1400 specimens illustrating the habits, costumes, war and domestic implements of the various races and nations. Among the manuscripts there are a very large number relating to our early civil and ecclesiastical history. In the section of fine arts there are several hundred portraits, paintings and engravings, many of which are of great historical value. In the de-

partment of Natural History are large numbers of geological specimens, minerals, fossils, etc.

In addition to the stated quarterly and regular monthly meetings, field-meetings are held by the Institute, during the summer months, at such times and places as may be agreed upon. Usually six of these meetings are held each season in different places in the county, as circumstances may decide. They have thus far been held in nearly every town in the county. The forenoon is devoted to rambling in the woods and fields, or on the beach, in quest of nature's treasures, or visiting some old historic or antiquarian relic. In the afternoon the attendants assemble in some church, town hall, or school-house, and after a collation discuss the subjects presented to notice during the day. The public are invited to be present and to participate on these occasions. The meetings are very popular and largely attended. Of late the excursions have been extended to other parts of the country. Saratoga, the White Mountains, and the Hoosac Tunnel have been visited by the Institute excursionists, by rail, and the Isles of Shoals and Plymouth, by water. Lectures on the natural sciences and other subjects have been given by the society, and two publications, "The Bulletin of the Essex Institute," and "The Historical Collections of the Essex Institute," are issued under the direction of a publishing committee. The presidents of the Institute have been Daniel A. White, Asahel Huntington and Francis Peabody. The present officers are Dr. Henry Wheatland, president, Capt. George M. Whipple, secretary, and William P. Upham, Esq., librarian.

Dr. Wheatland has never practised medicine, but has given great attention to historical and scientific investigations. He graduated at Harvard University, 1832, is an original member of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, is a founder of the Essex county Natural History Society, and of the Essex Institute; he is also vice-president of the Peabody Academy of Science, and clerk of the Athenæum. He stands pre-eminent among the antiquarians of Essex county.

In 1854, Miss Caroline Plummer bequeathed to the Salem Athenæum \$30,000, to be expended in the erection of a suitable building to contain the library of that institution. Plummer Hall was erected from the proceeds of her legacy. An agreement was made between the Athenæum and the Institute, whereby both societies were enabled to occupy it. It is also the headquarters and contains the library of the Essex southern district Medical Society. The library contains about 1,500 volumes. Of this society Dr. Amos H. Johnson is the president. Plummer Hall is the seat of letters and science in Essex county.

The great-grandfather of Nathaniel Bowditch formerly occupied a house on the site of Plummer Hall. Subsequently Hon. Nathan Reed built and occupied a town residence here. Dr. Reed, as he was sometimes called, originated the building of the "Danvers iron works." He was also the "*actual* inventor¹ of the first steamboat with paddle wheels in American waters." The trial trip of this boat

¹Essex Hist. Coll., Vol. 1, p. 184.

which took place in 1789, was from the Danvers iron works to Beverly. On board were the Governor of the Commonwealth and other distinguished men.

William Hickling Prescott, the historian, was born, May 4, 1776, in the Reed house. Later Capt. Joseph Peabody removed to it from the Grafton house opposite, and lived there till his death, which occurred in 1844. Rev. Robert Staunton, the first minister in the East parish, formerly occupied the Grafton house. Capt. Joseph Peabody, born in Middleton, 1757, was one of the most eminent merchants of his day, carrying on a commerce that encircled the globe, and making the port of Salem the point of arrival and departure of his richly laden fleet.

In the rear of Plummer Hall stands the little old "First Church" building, snatched from decay by the antiquarians of the Essex Institute, and next westerly of Plummer Hall is the mansion of the late Francis Peabody, son of Capt. Joseph. Hon. Charles W. Upham, in his "Memoir of Francis Peabody," read before the Institute, July 18, 1868, speaks of Mr. Peabody, and of the old First Church building, as follows :

"His enterprise and liberality, stimulated by the lively interest he felt in our local annals and antiquities, and his reverence for the memory of the first settlers of this place took effect in one great service, never to be forgotten in the historical department of the Essex Institute. It is a matter of record, that, in 1670, the meeting-house of the First Church was superseded by a new one, and that the old building, consisting of two parts, one erected in 1634, the



ST. PETER'S CHURCH.

(SEE PAGE 168.)

other an enlargement made in 1639, was thereafter used for various purposes, and ultimately removed from its original site. Tradition, supported by a strong array of certificates from certain individuals who had enjoyed favorable opportunities of receiving information on the subject, and which had long been current, pointed to a building owned by Mr. David Nichols, standing on the premises in the rear of the tanneries under the brow of Witch hill, as the original part of the primitive meeting-house that was erected in 1634. It was precisely of the same length, breadth and height, consisting of a single room, with plastered walls and ceiling, and a garret. It had been used for some time as a lumber room, but was in a state of decay that would not long have allowed of its being serviceable even in that way. The story was, that at an early period it had been occupied as a wayfarer's inn, a stopping place on the original road from Salem to Lynn; also the only one then travelled between the interior and Marblehead. If it was the veritable meeting-house, it had, as we know, been used still earlier in its immediate history, as a school-house. The subject was investigated by the Essex Institute. Mr. Nichols presented the building, and the Salem Athenæum gave a site for it, where it now stands, in the rear of Plummer Hall. Colonel (Francis) Peabody, who with the late George A. Ward, had taken a leading interest in the matter, offered to assume the entire expense of the operation of removal and reconstruction."

With careful workmen Mr. Peabody directed and superintended the process of taking it to pieces, and moving it to its present location. This original meeting-house was twenty feet in length, seventeen in width, and twelve in the height of its posts. It stood with its front on what is now Essex street. It had a

gallery over the door at this end. The minister's seat was against the southern wall, opposite the door. The people sat on benches, possibly at first upon logs. When it was enlarged an additional gallery was constructed, the door was changed to the western side and the pulpit placed opposite to it, on the eastern side, with an aisle five feet wide leading from one to the other. The women sat on the left of this aisle, as entering the door, and the men upon the right. The deacons and elders sat near the minister. The galleries were occupied by leading persons.

The absence of any evidence of a gallery, in the building found under the brow of Witch hill, caused a doubt in the minds of some as to whether this was the original First meeting-house. The plaster and mortar that covered the walls and beams was such as was used only in very early times. Upon picking it off mortices were found which demonstrated the existence and position of the gallery. There were other marks that proved to a certainty that this was the veritable First Church building, and no new revelation in science was ever hailed with more genuine delight than this discovery. This building is preserved in as nearly its original condition as possible. The weather boarding and roof have been renewed, but the frame-work and the floor remain. The room of this building is to-day filled with relics of old times. On its walls are pictures of events and men important in the history of this old town and our country. A good portrait of Thomas Paine may here be seen. The first musical instrument, perhaps, made in America is also here. This old building,

standing upon grounds contiguous to Col. Francis Peabody's garden, may fittingly be cherished as the monument of this active and enterprising man.

Mr. Peabody was born in Salem, December 7, 1801. He was a man of extraordinary activity and mobility of temperament, and his mind had a natural tendency to scientific and mechanical operations. Among other things he built the paper mills and the linseed oil mills in Middleton, and the Lead works in South Salem, and was active in promoting the formation of the Salem Lyceum, and the Harmony Grove corporation. He was colonel of the 1st Regiment, 1st Brigade, 2d Division, Massachusetts militia, and it was probably owing to his energy and zeal in the service, that the famous muster and sham fight, well remembered by our older citizens, took place near Tapley's brook, in what was then Danvers, on the 6th of October, 1826. Five regiments of infantry—one each from Beverly and Marblehead—one regiment, and a battalion of artillery and a battalion of cavalry took part. It was the last great affair of the kind under the old military system, when the whole male population, with limited exceptions, within the age, was enrolled and mustered. Col. Peabody was the first to introduce the system of miscellaneous courses of public lectures on scientific and literary subjects, which has since been developed into one of the most efficient agents in advancing the intelligence and general civilization of the people of this country. The Bradstreet mansion, torn down in 1750, occupied the site of Francis Peabody's mansion. The vener-

able Governor Simon Bradstreet died here on the 27th of March, 1697. His first wife Anne, the daughter of Governor Thomas Dudley, wrote the first book of poems published in America.

On the site of the Bowker block, Hon. William Browne built a house in 1698. He bequeathed it to his son William, who married Governor Burnet's daughter. He left it to his son William Burnet Browne, who sold it to his cousin William Browne, the banished loyalist. When this estate was confiscated Browne's mother took it for a debt from her son, and afterwards sold it to William Gray, the merchant.

Judge Andrew Oliver, Judge of the Court of Common Pleas for Essex County, before the Revolution, and a tory during the Revolution, lived (1793) on the western corner of Liberty and Essex streets. His father Andrew Oliver was a colonial statesman, subservient to the Crown, and in 1765, when appointed distributor of stamps in Boston, was hung in effigy on the "Liberty Tree," by the citizens, and compelled to resign.

Nearly opposite the head of St. Peter street, on Essex street, is the East India Marine Hall, in which is located the East India Marine Museum. This museum is filled with natural and artificial curiosities, interesting and beautiful. This institution was organized in 1799, and incorporated March 3, 1801. One of its objects was to form a museum of curiosities, particularly such as are to be found beyond the Cape of Good Hope and Cape Horn. Its members consisted of such masters and supercargoes

of vessels as had doubled either of the above capes. The museum is now united with that of the Peabody Academy of Science, an institution founded in 1867 through the munificence of George Peabody, the London banker. He donated \$140,000 for that purpose; \$40,000 of this amount to purchase the East India Marine Hall, and to properly fit up the same, the \$100,000 to serve as a permanent fund, the interest on which is to be used for the "advancement of science and useful knowledge in the county of Essex." Among the most interesting of the curiosities in the museum is a wooden-ball cut in two and carved on the inside with a representation of heaven and hell. In the one-half of the ball is Satan and his numerous imps about him, performing all sorts of antics, while in the other half is the "King of Kings" surrounded by his host of winged angels glorifying the Lord. By the aid of a powerful microscope every feature of the various figures are seen to be perfect. The size of the ball is not larger than two and a half inches in diameter. The carving is supposed to be the work of a monk of the sixteenth century. It is one of the most remarkable works of art in the known world. Thousands of dollars have been offered for it, but it cannot be purchased.

Next west of the East India Marine Hall, is the Pickman house. It is now owned by Mrs. Le Masters, who has erected some stores in front of it, on a line with the street, and concealed the old house from view. The Pickman house was built in 1750 by Benjamin Pickman, Esq. Pickman represented

Salem in the General Court in 1744 ; was one of the committee of war for carrying on the siege of Louisburg in 1745 ; was Judge of the Superior Court, 1756, and colonel of the Salem regiment at the same time. He died 1773, leaving this house to his eldest son, Benjamin, who thought the colonies had not sufficient grounds to revolt against the mother country, so went to England in 1775. He returned in 1785 and was afterwards made town treasurer. On the site of the Pickman house Henry Bartholomew built a residence soon after the settlement.

St. Peter street was formerly known as Prison lane. On the corner of St. Peter and Brown streets, is situated the stone edifice of the St. Peter's Episcopal Church. Religious services of the Church of England, from which this parish sprung, were held in Salem at a very early date. The first edifice of the society was erected here in 1733. The land was given to the parish by Philip English, a gentleman who in the time of the witchcraft delusion, was with his wife among the number of the accused.

Mr. English was a warm adherent of the Church of England, and asserted publicly that the charter of the colony had been violated in various ways by the colonial government, and that there was no religious toleration to be had under it as construed by the authorities ; he was himself a churchman and desired toleration for the church, and felt that he could not obtain it. He adhered to the church with great pertinacity, and as late as 1725 (says Felt) was imprisoned in Salem jail, for refusing to pay a tax for the support of the East Congregational

Society. He was then in his 75th year. The law releasing churchmen from paying a tax for the support of congregationalism was not passed until 1732. During the Revolutionary war, St. Peter's Church was brought into a very low and disorganized condition, and the house of worship was closed for awhile. The proprietors finally assembled and petitioned William Wetmore, Esq., a justice of the peace, for a warrant to call a meeting at which the proper officers were chosen, and Mr. Steward, the teacher of the grammar school, was engaged to read prayers and sermons. It was also voted to do what they could towards repairing the church, which had suffered many depredations from the angry violence of its opposers, over six hundred panes of glass having been broken, besides other injuries. Under the ministry of Mr. Carlyle the parish was much blessed. By his untiring efforts it was raised from the low condition in which he found it, to a position of comparative prosperity. Mr. Carlyle was a son-in-law of Simon Forrester.

The rectors of St. Peter's Church have been as follows:—Rev. Charles Brockwell, A.M.; Rev. William McGilchrist; Rev. Nathaniel Fisher; Rev. Thomas Carlyle; Rev. Thomas W. Coit; Right Rev. Alexander Viets Griswold; Rev. John Apthorp Vaughan; Rev. Charles Mason; Rev. William Rouse Babcock; Rev. George Leeds; Rev. William Rawlins Pickman; Rev. James Oliver Scripture; Rev. E. M. Gushee. The present rector is Rev. Charles Arey, D.D.

Five or six rods north of St. Peter's Church is the

edifice of the Central Baptist Church. It was first called the "Second Baptist Church of Salem." It was organized in January, 1826, and was then composed of "eleven brothers and twenty-one sisters," who were dismissed from the First Baptist Church for the purpose of organizing a second church. The present building was dedicated in June of the same year. About 1867 the house was remodelled, and in the spring of 1877, it was raised and a chapel built in the basement. Mr. George Leonard was the first pastor and teacher. His successors have been—Robert E. Pattison, Cyrus P. Grovesnor, Joseph Banvard, D.D., Benjamin Brierly, William H. Eaton, D.D., Daniel D. Winn, S. Hartwell Pratt and David Weston, D.D. The present pastor is the Rev. W. H. H. Marsh.

North of the Central Baptist meeting-house, on the east side of St. Peter street, stands a house which is one of the few remaining specimens of the "jutting upper stories." It is two stories high, the upper story looking like a cap dropped down upon the lower story. There are many of the old-time residences still to be found in Salem, and a stranger who has any interest in such monuments of the past, will find opportunity to utilize a whole day quite agreeably in examining them under direction of a competent guide.

At the foot of St. Peter street is situated the stone prison, or county jail. It is an imposing structure built here in 1813 by the county. With the large brick house for the keeper it cost \$80,000. The present keeper of this jail is "Capt." John D. Cross, a

man peculiarly adapted to the position, kind to those deserving of kindness, and strict and severe with those who forfeit all claims to compassion.

On the eastern side of the jail is the Howard-street burying-ground. This was first laid out in the early part of the present century. A plan of it was first exhibited in 1801. A part of it was reserved for colored people, and another part for strangers.

A little to the south-west of the county jail, is the present residence of Abner C. Goodell, jr., Register of the Court of Probate, president of the Naumkeag Street Railway, one of the vice-presidents of the Essex Institute, a trustee of the Peabody Academy of Science, and an antiquarian of some note. His house has undergone several enlargements and great alterations, more especially the western half. It was formerly the county jail, and was built by the county in 1684. Its dimensions then were "thirteen feet stud, and twenty feet square, accommodated with a yard." This was the jail in which victims of the witchcraft delusion were incarcerated, and where Giles Corey was pressed to death, pleading in his agony that more weight might be put upon him. That portion of Federal street, upon which it is situated, was then called County street, and extended from what is now St. Peter to Washington streets. The first record of imprisonment that we find, was that of Margaret Payne (or Page), who was ordered, in 1643, "to be sent to the Boston goal as a lazy, idle, loitering person."

On Rust street, a short street leading from Fed-

eral to Bridge streets, is the meeting-house of the Universalist Church. The earlier records of this society have unfortunately been lost ; hence outside sources of information have been sought. It is a noticeable fact, that not one of the Salem newspapers of that period made the slightest allusion to the laying of the corner-stone of the church edifice, which occurred August 17, 1808. It indicates, perhaps, the strength of religious prejudice in the earlier times. The house was dedicated in June, 1809. The building externally remained as it was first built, until quite recently, when it was architecturally improved. We present a cut of its original appearance. The first religious service in the interest of the doctrine of Universalism in this city was held by appointment in the old Court House, in the fall of 1804. This meeting was followed by others at Nathaniel Frothingham's house, different clergymen preaching ; among them, Reverends John Murray, Thomas Barnes, Thomas Jones, Hosea Ballou and Edward Turner. The church, a distinct organization from the society, was formed in 1810, and then consisted of about forty members. The pastors of this church have been as follows :—Reverends Edward Turner, Hosea Ballou, Joshua Flagg, Barzilliar Streeter, Seth Stetson, Lemuel Willis, Matthew Hale Smith, Linus S. Everett, Eben Fisher, Sumner Ellis, and Williard Spaulding. The present pastor is Rev. Edwin C. Bolles, Ph. D. Dr. Bolles is one of the most eminent scholars and preachers in the denomination. Few clergymen surpass him in grace and beauty of oratory. His scientific attainments are also of a



OLD UNIVERSALIST CHURCH.

(SEE PAGE 172.)

very high order, excelling in some branches. His fresh and fervid style of preaching is calculated to popularize science.

South of the Universalist Church, on Church street, is the house of the steam-fire engines of the city. The fire department of Salem is one of the most efficient in the State. It consists of two steamers, six hose carriages and one hook and ladder truck. The apparatus is manned by volunteer firemen, competent and skilled. The Wenham water works, which supply the city with a never-failing quantity of water, are equal to the best in the country.

Passing through Bridge street to the west from the Universalist Church, over what was formerly the North river beach, we arrive at the historic North bridge. Here we complete the historic circle of a quarter of a mile radius, in which we have thus far strolled. This bridge was the scene of the bloodless yet determined fight between the patriots of Salem and the King's troops, in 1775. It is known in history as "Leslie's retreat."

Capt. David Mason, from instructions of a committee appointed by the Provincial Congress, had privately committed to the care of John Foster, on the north side of the river, seventeen cannon for the purpose of having them fitted with carriages. The original house in which Foster lived at that time is still standing on North street, next north of the corner of Franklin street. The shop in which the cannon were mounted stood on the corner.

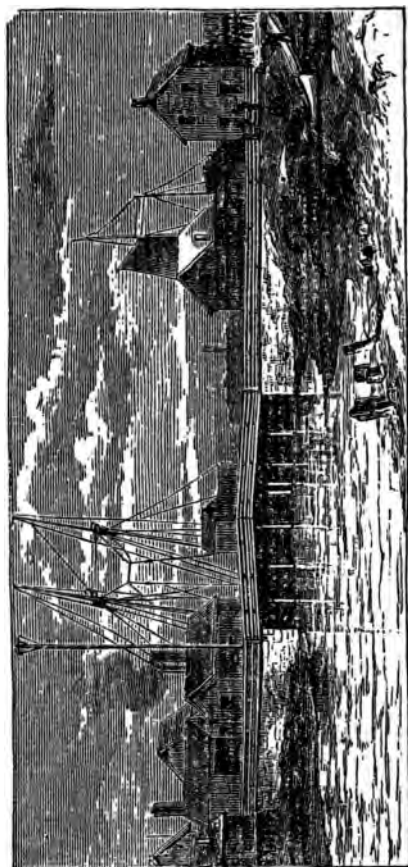
Information of what was going on in Salem was communicated to Gov. Gage in Boston, some say by

a "journeyman," or an "old countryman," in Foster's employ, while others think that it was a citizen by the name of Sargent, or else the young tory lawyer from Ipswich by the name of Samuel Porter. Col. Leslie, with 300 of the King's troops, was at once dispatched from Castle Island, to capture the ordnance. Leslie and his force arrived by water off Marblehead, at about noon on Sunday, February 26. The people of Marblehead soon suspected that Salem was their destination, and several persons, among them Maj. John Pedrick, hastened hither to give the alarm. The people of Salem were mostly attending church. The meetings were dismissed, the bells were rung, the drums were beaten, alarm guns were fired, and the inhabitants were soon gathered in large numbers at the principal points of interest, discussing the wisest course to pursue. Some proceeded to what was then a bridge crossing South river, at Mill street, the only means then of crossing the stream, and tore the bridge to pieces as best they could. The British on their arrival at this point were delayed until they could repair it. Samuel Porter, the lawyer from Ipswich, intimated to Leslie that the cannon were concealed at North Salem. The troops hastened thither, but at North bridge found determined opposition. The draw of the bridge was hoisted, and Col. Timothy Pickering with forty armed militia, whose numbers were constantly increasing, were prepared to resist any further approach. Exasperated at this interruption, Leslie finally ordered a captain to face his company towards the men assembled on the opposite shore, and

fire at them. Capt. John Felt, it is said, warned Leslie that should his men fire, not a man of them would leave Salem alive. Leslie perceiving by the determined appearance of the little band of patriots, that it would not be best to resort to such extreme measures, next endeavored to get his men across the stream by means of gondolas and fishing boats. The citizens at once strove to defeat this movement, which was effectually done by scuttling the boats as rapidly as possible, or casting them adrift. While matters were fast tending to a disastrous conflict, the Rev. Thomas Barnard of the North Church, attempted to conciliate matters. He finally succeeded in compromising the affair, by obtaining Pickering's consent to allow Leslie to cross the bridge and proceed thirty rods beyond, on the promise that he would then countermarch his force and return to Boston. The news of the invasion had reached the surrounding towns, and as the royal troops left Salem a company from Danvers had arrived to lend assistance to our people. Thus ended the first armed resistance to British rule in America, at which, but for Capt. Felt and Thomas Barnard, would doubtless have been shed the first blood of the Revolution.

North bridge was built about the year 1744. It was owned by James Lindall and other proprietors of North Fields. The entire length of the causeway and bridge was 860 feet, and it was only eighteen feet wide. It had a draw at the middle which was at least eighteen feet long. Such is the description of the bridge as it was first constructed, and as it remained when the trouble occurred with Leslie and

his men. It was styled in the early days "the great bridge." Its construction was considered a great undertaking at the period of its commencement. The town required that our inhabitants should have free passage over and under it, and that it should be kept in good repair by the owners, or forfeited to the town. The conditions were not kept, and it was forfeited in 1755. A new company was allowed to take it, but in 1789, it again passed into the possession of the town, this time by mutual consent. When Leslie complained at being stopped on the King's highway, a bystander rejoined that it was not the King's highway; that it belonged to the proprietors of North Fields. We present a picture of this bridge as it is to-day. The causeway has been extended to the draw, and both causeway and draw have been greatly improved and widened. A flag-staff erected here marks the spot of the bloodless fight.



NORTH BRIDGE.—(SEE PAGE 176.)

CHAPTER VI.

THE INDIANS.—DEED OF MARBLEHEAD AND OF SALEM.—INDIAN VILLAGE.—NORTH SALEM.—ITS EARLY DAYS.—CONCEALING THE CANNON.—ORNE'S POINT.—COLD SPRINGS.—LIBERTY HILL.—ORNE-STREET CEMETERY.—CATHOLIC CEMETERY.—HARMONY GROVE CEMETERY.—TOWN BRIDGE.—TANNING.—GALLOWES, OR WITCH, HILL.—HANGING OF THE WITCHES.—GILES COREY.—HIGHLAND AVENUE.—FLOATING BRIDGE.—GREAT PASTURE.—QUAKER MEETING-HOUSE.—PERSECUTION OF THE QUAKERS.—NONANTUM HALL.—NEGRO COLONY.—"KING MUMFORD."—BUFFUM'S CORNER.—SEAMEN'S ORPHAN AND CHILDREN'S FRIEND SOCIETY.—THE NAUMKEAG STREET RAILWAY.—SOUTH SALEM.—SOUTH BRIDGE.—DERBY FARM.—LAFAYETTE-STREET METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—NAUMKEAG MILLS.—FOREST RIVER LEAD MILLS.—OIL WORKS.—MARINE RAILWAY.—CITY ORPHAN ASYLUM.—UNION BRIDGE.

THE early settlers found this country inhabited by Indians, a people so called, because this country, when first discovered, was supposed to be a part of India. These Indians were divided into nations, each of which consisted of many tribes. Each tribe was governed by a sachem, king, or a sagamore.

The Naumkeag Indians inhabited this portion of the country. They belonged to the Pawtucket nation, which held dominion over the territory north of Boston as far as the Piscataqua river. There were as many as six other Indian nations in New England. The Tarrantines who inhabited the eastern part of Maine, and the Pequots who occupied Connecticut, were ever at war with some of the other nations. They were the Goths and Vandals of aboriginal New England. Gookin, in the "Massachusetts Historical

Collections," has enumerated 18,000 warriors in five nations. If the remaining nations were as populous, there must have been in the vicinity of 25,000 warriors and at least 100,000 Indians in New England.

The sachem of the Pawtucket nation was Nanapashemet, or "New Moon." He was one of the greatest sachems in New England. In the spring of 1615 the Tarrantines were in some way provoked by the other Indians, and in retaliation they carried their revenge to an extent scarcely paralleled in the history of human warfare. "They killed the great Bashaba of the Penobscot, murdered his women and children, and overran the whole country from Penobscot to the Blue hills. Their death-word was 'cram! cram!—kill! kill!'" So many thousands on thousands did the Tarrantines slaughter, that Ferdinand Gorges, who sold to Massachusetts, for 1,250 pounds, his rights to the province of Maine, said it was "horrible to be spoken of." In 1617 a desolating sickness—either a plague, the small pox, or fever—raged among the Indians here, so that the 3000 warriors which the Pawtuckets numbered when John Smith visited this coast, were reduced to a few hundreds at the coming of Conant. Still the vengeance of the Tarrantines was unsatiated, and they hunted for the lives of the few sagamores who remained. Nanapashemet survived the great sickness, but only to be killed in 1619 by the Tarrantines. His widow, known as Squaw Sachem, was left with three sons, all of whom became sagamores. Squaw Sachem lived after the death of her husband at what is now North Salem, and married Webbacowet, the great

physician of her nation. She died in 1667, being then old and blind. The Rev. John Higginson, son of Francis Higginson, testified of these people as follows :

“To ye best of my remembrance when I came over with my father to this place, being then about thirteen years old, there was in these parts a widow woman, called Squaw Sachem, who had three sons, Sagamore John, kept at Mistick, Sagamore James, at Saugust, and Sagamore George, here at Naumkeke. Whether he was actual Sachem here, I cannot say, for he was young then, about my age, and I think there was an elder man y^t was at least his guardian. But y^e Indian towne of Wigwams was on y^e North side of y^e North river not farre from Simondes, and yⁿ both y^e North and South side of that river was called Naumkeke.”

Sagamore John (Wonohaquaham) gave the whites permission to settle at Charlestown, and he was known as a chief “of gentle and good disposition.” Sagamore James (Montowampate) was not so favorably inclined towards the whites, yet, he was obliged quite often to seek their aid against his people's enemy, the Tarrantines. Sagamore George (Wenepoykin — pronounced with an accent and a lingering on the third syllable, We-ne-pawwe-kin) was the youngest son of the great sachem. There was also a daughter, Yawata, called by the settlers Abigail. Both of the eldest sons died in 1633, and George became sagamore of Saugus (Lynn), and Mystic (Chelsea), as well as of Naumkeag. On the death of his mother he became the sachem of all that part

of Massachusetts which is north and east of Charles river. He was also called George Rumney Marsh, and Sagamore George No-Nose. He was taken prisoner in the Wampanoag war in 1676, and died in 1684. He left one son, Manatahqua, and three daughters—Cicely (Petaghuncksq), Little Walnut or Sarah (Wattaquattinusk) and Susanna (Petagoonaqual). These daughters are said to have been very beautiful, and were the belles of the forest.

Manatahqua, the son, had two sons, David (Knnkshamooshaw) and Samuel (Wuttannoh, which means staff). The family of Sagamore George, after the Wampanoag war, went to Wameset, or Chelmsford, now Lowell, and settled near Pawtucket falls. In 1684 the Marblehead people obtained a deed of their town from the widow of George, "Joane Ahawayet," and her relatives. Ahawayet died in 1685. The people of Salem in 1686 obtained a deed of their town, which was signed by the relatives of Sagamore George, as follows:—David Nonnuphanohow, Samuel Wuttaannoh, John Tontohqunne, Cicely Petaghuncksq, Thomas Vsqueakussennum, alias "Captain Tom," James Quannophkownatt, alias Rumney Marsh, Israel Quannophkownatt, Joane Quannophkownatt, Yawata, and Wattawtinnusk. Yawata, among these signers, was the daughter of the great sachem, Nanapashemet, and widow of John Oonsumog and sister of Sagamore George. The procuring of the deeds of these lands from the Indians was considered a matter of great importance, as the people were suspicious that under James, the Crown agents would pay little regard to titles that did not

rest on some clear and unimpeachable evidence. When Sir Andros in 1689, asked Higginson whether New England was the King's territory, he received the reply: "It belongs to the colonists who hold it by just occupation and *purchase from the Indians.*" The deed of Salem cost £20.

The Indian village, at North Salem, was in the vicinity of what is now Mason street. The Indian houses, called wigwams, were rude structures made of poles set around in the shape of a cone, and covered with bark or mats; their weapons were bows, arrows and tomahawks; their money was shells gathered on the beaches, and their clothing was beaver, deer, or seal skins. They had but few arts and only such as were requisite for their subsistence. They usually buried their dead on the sides of hills next the sun.

The manner in which the early settlers were received at Naumkeag by the Indians is shown by the testimony of William Dixey, of Beverly, as follows:—

"I came here to the place now called Salem, New England, in June, 1629. The Indians bid us welcome and showed themselves very glad that we came to dwell among them, and I understand they had kindly entertained the English that came over hither before we came and the Indians and English had a *field* in common fenced in together; and the Indians fled to shelter themselves under the English, oft-times saying they were afraid of their enemy Indians in the country. In particular I remember sometime after we arrived the Agawam Indians complained to Mr. Endicott that they were afraid of other Indians called, as I take it, Tarrantines. Hugh Browne was sent with others in a boat to Agawam for the Indians'

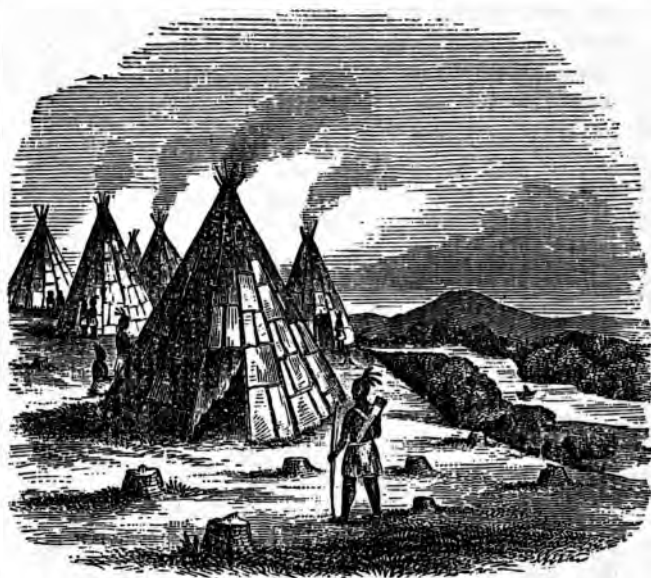
release, and at other times we gave our neighbor Indians protection from their enemy Indians.

Taken upon oath, this 16th February, 1680. Before

WILLIAM BROWN,
BARTHOLEMEW GEDNEY,
Assistants."

North Salem, or North Fields as it was early called, was owned by private individuals. Gradually streets were laid out and accepted, and the whole finally became a public portion of the city. A few years ago North street was a very narrow street bordered on each side with stately elms, whose branches meeting above the centre of the street, formed in summer a very delightful shade. Under the administration of Mayor Cogswell the street was greatly widened and the trees taken down.

The settlers had farms at North Salem at an early date, and here in the vicinity of the ancient "Towne of wigwams," the pleasant instance of fraternity between the Indians and whites was no doubt exhibited. This part of our city still preserves in a degree its old rural aspect, and there is still many a quiet woodland scene within its limits to remind us of its ancient uses, and of the people who roamed over its surface. The cannon which Leslie was ordered to seize were quickly hid in the forest here, on hearing of the approach of the King's troops. There were at least twelve of them in all, some say seventeen. Some of them were conveyed to the neighborhood of Buffum's hill, so called at that time, which is westward of North street, near the present



INDIAN TOWN OF WIGWAMS.—(SEE PAGE 181.)

residence of Gen. Devcreux. Some were buried in a gravel pit near the mills in Danvers, while others were sent in the vicinity of Cold Springs, or Orne's point, at the foot of Orne street. At Orne's point, Charles A. Ropes, Esq., owns and occupies one of the finest estates in the city. Cold Springs is one of the most charming spots in our environs, and a familiar retreat for the lover of the beautiful in nature. Above Cold Springs is Liberty hill, the property of the city of Salem. To the east of it are Orne's woods, and to the westward of it are Leavitt's woods, a patch of fine oaks surrounded by a smooth-shaven field. Beyond Orne's woods is Kernwood, the beautiful and sightly estate formerly owned by Col. Francis Peabody, but purchased a few years ago by General Horace Binney Sargent, of Boston, a soldier of our recent war. Kernwood occupies what was formerly known as Horse Pasture point.

Near the head of Orne street, and extending to the north, is Orne-street cemetery. This cemetery consists of an old part and a new. The "old burying-ground" was purchased by the town for a burial place in 1807. It is that part of the present cemetery situated on Orne street. It contained about two and a half acres. In 1864 the city purchased a part of the Putnam estate, and the following year set it apart as an addition to the "old burying-ground." It now contains in all about eight and a half acres. In 1872 a lot containing 8000 square feet was set apart as a soldiers' lot, for the burial of such soldiers as Phil. H. Sheridan, Post 34, Grand Army of the Republic, of Salem, may designate.

To the north-west of Orne-street cemetery is the Catholic cemetery. This burying-ground was purchased by Father Conway, during his pastorate in Salem. It was sold to his parishioners in lots or single graves. Those who purchased lots were given a deed signed by the bishop. Fathers Conway and Hartney are buried here side by side. They were both held in the highest esteem by their people, and were followed to their graves by an unusually large number of mourners. An appropriate monument has been erected above their remains.

The principal cemetery in Salem is the Harmony Grove cemetery. It is situated in what is known as Carltonville, in the north-western portion of the city. It covers an area of sixty-five acres, the north-western portion of which extends into the adjoining town of Peabody. In its natural scenery, and in the beauty of its sculptured decorations, this grove ranks among the finest enclosures for the resting place of the departed in New England. It was established about 1840, the proprietors having been made a corporate body in that year. Its project was first started by a few gentlemen who desired to found a new burial place in Salem, in consequence of the crowded state of the old graveyards about the city, and who also desired to combine the beauties of natural scenery, with cultivated tastes, in the arrangement of a new cemetery. The first meeting in behalf of the enterprise was held in 1837 in Lyceum Hall, at the suggestion of Mr. William H. Foster. It was there decided that a public meeting of the friends of the enterprise should be held. A

committee was also chosen to examine different localities. This committee unanimously reported in favor of what is Harmony Grove, which was then known as "Quaker pasture." In 1839 Alexander Wadsworth, of Boston, was employed to make a topographical plan of the grounds, and lay them out in walks and avenues. The cemetery was consecrated on Sunday, June 14, 1840. It was a most beautiful day, clear, calm and bright, seeming typical of the grand and peaceful mission and destiny of the grove. The services were most imposing. Prayers were made by the Rev. Brown Emerson, of Salem, and the Rev. Charles C. Sewall, of Danvers. The address was delivered by the Hon. Daniel A. White, and original hymns, by the Rev. James Flint, D.D., Nathaniel Lord, jr., and William Wallace Morland, were sung. The ode was read by the Rev. Mr. Wayland, and the music was under the direction of Mr. Jacob Hood. The natural formation of the ground seems peculiarly adapted for the purpose to which it was consecrated, and combines hills and dales, craggy rocks, mossy dells, steep declivities, and level plains, besides an innumerable variety of trees. Probably a specimen of every kind of tree in New England may be found here, in the branches of which, in the warm days of summer, lodge myriads of feathered songsters, who fill the perfumed air with a music which no art can imitate, while the squirrels leap from limb to limb with no one to molest them or to make them afraid. At the eastern entrance, on the Salem side of the cemetery, is a rustic arch and gateway made of stone, over which twines and droops a vine

which adds to it a romantic and at the same time a venerable and ancient appearance. On the right of the entrance, as the visitor enters, is a winding path which leads across a rustic bridge and over a running brook, to the residence of the superintendent of the grounds, which is a most picturesque cottage. Almost directly in front of the gate is the principal thoroughfare, called Highland avenue. On the right of this avenue is a piece of sculpture representing a lion and a lamb, side by side, the lion, with his noble head resting on his paws, apparently in slumber, while the little white lamb—emblem of innocence—lies peacefully and calmly by his side. On this avenue is the receiving tomb, and many of the finest lots in the grove. There are those which have no sculptured marble to render them noticeable, as well as those on which wealth has lavished monuments and carved slabs. Many have been rendered beautiful by the presence of cultivated flowers. Some of these lots, in which beloved relatives and friends have been tenderly laid to rest, are hardly distinguishable from rich gardens. Among the many objects of interest in this cemetery, is the beautiful marble column, surmounted by a bust of Washington, erected to the memory of Jesse Smith, the last survivor of Washington's body-guard. Among the many remains that lie buried here might be mentioned those of Dudley Leavitt Pickman, one of Salem's old merchants; Rev. William Bentley; Rev. Timothy Flint; Rev. James Flint; George Peabody, the London banker and philanthropist; Lieut. Col. Henry Merritt, of the late civil war, and many other

heroes, martyrs, noblemen and noblewomen, from all walks of life. On Highland avenue, near the entrance to the grove from the Salem side, is situated the soldiers' lot, set apart for the burial place of the soldiers, the same as the one spoken of in the Orne-street cemetery. The picturesqueness of Harmony Grove is remarkable in an area no larger than that covered, and the possession in our midst of such a beautiful "city of the dead," where our citizens may visit at any time and view the beauties of nature and of art, and at the same moment meditate upon the common lot of all that are of the flesh, is due to the foresight and taste of such men as William H. Foster, Francis Peabody, J. S. Cabot, Stephen C. Phillips, Abel L. Peirson, John C. Lee, George Wheatland, William Sutton, Pickering Dodge and Fitch Poole, the most of whom have departed from earthly scenes and joined the hosts of immortality. •

North river originally flowed in all its purity along the southern border of this grove, and the whole must have proved a most delightful haunt of the Indians. The river now is but a dark and murky stream, and is the only blot upon the otherwise charming locality. A creek from North river, below this point, originally flowed in and across what is now the hollow in Boston street. The highway in the seventeenth century had the general course of this street, and led across a bridge at the hollow, known as town bridge. This bridge was built in 1640 soon after our settlement. In 1646 it was taken down and a causeway built instead. In the

days of the bridge there was a pond and a salt marsh on the south side of Boston street, made by the flowing in of the *creek* under the bridge.

In this vicinity to-day are the noted tanneries and currying shops of Salem. Nine hundred thousand dollars are invested here in this business, and some eight hundred men find constant employment at it. The business of tanning, or the "making of leather" would, as a whole, come properly under the title of leather, which is a chemical combination of skin with the astringent principle of oak or hemlock bark, etc., or tannic acid; the tanneries of Salem using principally hemlock bark. Leather is an article which is now in constant demand, and it seems as if we should hardly know what to do without it, as it enters into the construction of a large portion of our clothing, and of various engines and machinery; also supplies harnesses for our horses, linings for our carriages, and covers for our books. It is an article peculiarly adapted to the various purposes to which it is applied, and the art of its manufacture probably became known in an undeveloped form in the earliest period of man's history. As an article of clothing, skins are, according to Scripture, a direct gift to man from God, as we read in *Genesis*, 3: 21: "Unto Adam also and his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins and clothed them." When skins are first taken from animals they seem well adapted for clothing, as they are tough, flexible and elastic, but they shrink in drying, and become stiff and hard; water will then penetrate them, and when exposed to

moisture they become putrid and offensive. But if the skin be separated from the fleshy and fatty matters, and then be put into a solution of certain vegetables containing tannin, the skin separates the whole of the tannin from the liquid, and becomes hard, insoluble in water, almost impenetrable by it, and incapable of putrefaction. This operation is called tanning. The currying operation, which subsequently occurs, renders the leather pliable and more water-proof.

No description of tanning, however perfect, would give the reader that clear idea of the process that a few hours or a day spent among the tanneries would. If any readers desire to know more of the business which is the leading industry of both Salem and Peabody, they will do well to visit one or two of the many large tanneries here and see with their own eyes how they "make leather."

The greater portion of the territory of Salem is unsettled, and lies south-west of the city proper. It consists of several hills and a large area occupied only as pasture land. The hill situated farthest to the north and west is known as Gallows or Witch hill. It is just south of Boston street and west of the site of the old town bridge. The settlement has gradually crept up its northern side and is fast tending to occupy its very crown. This hill is historically noted for its familiarity with those terrible scenes of the past, which, like the fancied blood stains upon the hands of Lady Macbeth, continue to haunt the mind. Here on this eminence which overlooks the country and the ocean for miles, eigh-

teen of the supposed "witches," in that never-to-be forgotten summer of 1692, were hung. Bridget Bishop was here executed on June 10th, Rebecca Nurse, Sarah Goode and three others, on July 19th, and the Rev. George Burroughs, John Proctor, John Willard and one other, just one month later. The last scene of this kind was on September 9th, when Martha Corey, wife of Giles Corey, Alice Parker, Ann Pudeator and five others were executed. It has by some been supposed that George Jacobs, senior, was among the number that met death on this hill; but there is a tradition among his descendants that he was hung on an oak tree on his own farm, near the iron factory on Water's river in Danvers; and they also show an ancient grave near his house, in which they assert that his remains were laid. Burroughs, Proctor, Willard and one other, were paraded through the streets in a cart, before being taken to the place of execution. Burroughs was a minister who had been called from Wells, Maine, in 1680, to preach at Salem Village, now Danvers. Before he was executed he addressed the spectators of the appalling scene, declaring his innocence, and praying in such a heart-touching manner that many were affected to tears. Cotton Mather who was present, perceiving the effect of Burroughs' dying words upon those assembled, comforted them by declaring that he had but suffered his just reward and that no wrong had been done him.

In 1659 Giles Corey lived in a house which stood eight rods north-west from the north corner of Federal and Boston streets. He owned this and an ad-



PICKMAN HOUSE.—(SEE PAGE 167.)

jacent house and two or three acres of land. About ten years previous to the witchcraft days, Mr. Corey disposed of his real estate here and moved to Danvers, where he lived when accused of being a wizard.

Highland avenue, running from Boston street in a south-westerly direction, was formerly known as the Salem turnpike, or the road to Boston. It was opened for travel in 1803, and crosses Floating bridge pond, in Lynn, just outside the Salem limits. This pond is crossed by a bridge which floats on the water, and is 456 feet long. Until within a few years a toll was demanded from the travellers on this road. The toll-house still stands about midway between Boston street and the bridge. A large portion of the lands on the eastern side of Highland avenue are known as the "Great Pasture," and are owned by the "Great Pasture Company," of which the Hon. Caleb Foote is president.

The meeting-house of the Society of Friends in Salem, is a brick edifice which occupies the corner of Pine and Warren streets. It was built about the year 1831. It is presumable that the first meeting-house of the Quakers was built about the year 1658, when the present society was formed. Tradition says it was a farm-house, and stood, within the remembrance of some living, on the north side of Essex street, between Dean and Boston streets, and bore evidence of great antiquity. The site is now the burial ground of the society. Salem is historic in the persecution of the Quakers. These persecutions commenced in the year 1656, when severe laws were passed to prevent the increase of this denomi-

nation, and the wife of Lawrence Southwick was arraigned for absence from worship. The following year, after the minister had closed his sermon to the people, two Quakers attempted to address them. These Quakers were seized and sent to Boston, where they were flogged and imprisoned. Lawrence Southwick for having entertained these men in Salem, was also imprisoned. A year or two later the General Court passed severe laws against Quakers, forbidding any one to admit them to their houses under a penalty of forty shillings an hour. They were ranked with atheists, and called "wicked sinners." Their lands, cattle, corn and domestic furniture were taken from them, and they were thrown into prison for refusing to pay a parish tax for the support of a gospel which was not in accordance with their honest convictions; also for refusing to perform military duty, an avocation contrary to the teachings of their religion. Some were fined. In 1659 Daniel and Provided Southwick, for refusing to pay their fines, were ordered to be sold as slaves to any of the English living in Virginia or Barbadoes. Quite a number were banished on pain of death. Hannah Phelps was admonished, Wm. King was sentenced to be whipped and later was banished; Margaret Smith and Mary Trask were put in prison for attending the trial of some Quakers in Boston, who were hung, and Edward Wharton for asserting that they were unjustly hung, was both whipped and fined.

In 1661 Josiah Southwick, who was banished in 1659, returned to Massachusetts without leave. He was at once seized, stripped to the girdle, tied to

the rear of a cart and flogged through the streets of three or four towns. He then returned to Salem and remained. These are but a few of the many miseries to which the Quakers were subjected, and the methods of punishment which resulted from the incorrect views of religious liberty in the early days. In November, 1661, the General Court voted to comply with a letter from the King, which required the cessation of proceedings against the Quakers, and to "send such of them as are apprehended over to England for trial." Still the persecutions continued, while the Friends increased so rapidly that several days of fasting and prayer were held here and elsewhere, "that the spiritual plague might proceed no farther." Thomas Maule, one of the most famous Quakers of Salem, published a book in 1680, entitled "Truth Held Forth." For this, Maule was indicted, and the book ordered by the General Court to be searched for and seized. He afterward published another book, "Persecutors Mauled," in which he stated that he had five times been imprisoned, that thrice his goods had been taken from him, and that he had suffered other abuses, among which was a flogging, in 1669, for saying that Mr. Higginson "preached lies," and that his instruction was the "doctrine of devils." John Burton in 1661 was brought before the court and fined for some lack of obedience to the Orthodox church, whereupon he told the justices that they were "robbers and destroyers of the widows and the fatherless," that their priests "divined for money," and that their worship was "not the worship of God." Being com-

manded to be silent, he commanded the Court to be silent and continued speaking, whereupon he was ordered to the stocks. Religious idiosyncrasies prevailed to such an extent, that in 1662 the wife of Robert Wilson went through the streets of Salem with no clothes on, "as a sign," so she declared, "of the spiritual nakedness of town and colony." For this conduct she was uncovered to the waist, tied to the rear of a cart and flogged through one of the public streets. In 1663 Mr. Higginson, in a letter to the legislature, declared Salem to be a "nest of Quakers," and entreated "y^e hon'd court will please to consider what course may be taken for y^e dissolueing of y^e Quaker meetings here." The persecutions of the Quakers continued to a greater or less degree until 1728, when it was enacted that Anabaptists and Friends be exempt from taxation for the support of Congregational ministers. In 1757 a law was passed exempting the Friends from military musters. The Society of Friends in Salem, though never comprising more than a dozen or fifteen families has still lived. Its present membership is very small and may be summed up in five or six family names, the direct descendants of the originators in 1658.

Nonantum hall occupies a site on Warren street, just a little to the south-west from the Friends' meeting-house. It takes its name from the Nonantum Indians, a tribe of the Massachusetts nation which inhabited the territory south and west of Boston. This hall was purchased a few years since by the Young Men's Catholic Temperance Society, who now



PHILLIPS' WHARF IN 1860.—(SEE PAGE 218.)

occupy it as their regular place of meeting. This society was organized October 19, 1857. There are some five or six other temperance organizations in Salem, but this is the only one among them that owns a hall. Besides temperance societies in this city there are the Masons, Odd Fellows, Grand Army of the Republic, Hibernians, Knights of Pythias, Christian Associations, Young Men's Union, the Fraternity, Oratorio, etc.

In the vicinity of Nonantum Hall, on the old turn-pike, in the latter part of the eighteenth and the early part of the nineteenth centuries, quite a colony of negroes lived. This locality was the scene of frequent rows and drunkenness. One negro more noted than the rest, a big, burly, powerful fellow, named Mumford, was styled by the people of his day as "King Mumford."

The northern corner of Boston and Essex streets was popularly known in the early days as "Buffum's corner," from the fact that Robert Buffum, who died in 1669, owned a homestead here. The long distance from this point to Salem neck, suggested the old Salem phrase, "From Neck gate to Buffum's corner."

Federal street from Boston to St. Peter streets, is ranked among the fine streets of Salem. It is lined on both sides with many elegant mansions and shady trees. On this street is the St. James' Catholic Church, of which we have previously spoken.¹

The last matter of particular interest in the wes-

¹ See page 139.

tern part of the city, is the asylum of the Seamen's Orphan and Children's Friend Society, Mrs. Thorn-dike Proctor, president. It is situated at the foot of Carpenter street, which leads from Federal street to the North river, and is occupied by children under the matronage of Miss Maggie H. Barrows. This society was organized February 25, 1839, for the purpose of "improving the condition of such children as are in indigent circumstances and unprovided for." In 1844 it adopted its present name, at which time the asylum was purchased for \$1500, by Robert Brookhouse, merchant, and generously presented to the society.

Proceeding from Carpenter to Essex streets, we can there take a horse car and enjoy a short ride to Central street, from which we will stroll into South Salem. This horse railway is known as the Naum-keag Street Railway. It extends from "the square" in Peabody, to the head of Elliot street in Beverly, a distance of about four miles. It is owned by the Salem and South Danvers Horse Railroad Company, Benj. W. Russell, president. This company was incorporated March 1, 1861. The road was leased in 1874, to the Naumkeag Street Railway Company (A. C. Goodell, jr., president), for a period of thirty years. The latter company was organized as a corporation, March 1, 1875. The first rails for the building of this road were laid on Monday morning, April 27, 1863, from the corner of Washington and Essex streets towards Peabody.

South Salem was originally a peninsula of land bounded on the north and west by South river, and

on the east by Salem harbor. It is now connected with the city proper by the Washington street extension and South and Union bridges. South bridge was erected in 1805. It was built at the expense of Ezekiel H. Derby and others. The project was considered a foolish and extravagant one at the time, on the ground that South Salem would never be of any great use to the city. Mr. Derby had purchased much of the land, and had erected there, as his summer residence, what is now known as the "Lafayette House." The shores of South Salem were most beautiful, and the groves and shady nooks suggested for it the poetical name of "Lover's Retreat." This portion of our city has no great ancient history, except such as relates to its shipbuilding, previously mentioned. It is the most recently settled of all our territory. It has, within the past fifteen or twenty years, grown so wonderfully as to rank now as one of the finest portions of the city. Lafayette street is a broad and beautiful thoroughfare, adorned on each side with a large number of magnificent mansions. The estate of Mr. Derby, familiarly known as the Derby farm, was purchased a few years ago by Messrs. James F. Almy, Charles S. Clark, Nathaniel Wiggin, and others, and cut up into streets and house-lots, which added largely to the taxable property of the city. South bridge was accepted by the town in 1810; rebuilt in 1812 at the town's expense. It opened a new way to Marblehead and Lynn. Lafayette street is a few feet east of the location of the old road, which was but a narrow way, traces of which can yet be distinctly seen in-

side some of the lots on the western side of the street. This street is named in honor of Gen. Lafayette, who passed through it from Lynn to Salem, when on his second visit here in 1824.

The Lafayette Methodist Episcopal Church is situated on Lafayette street, at the corner of Harbor street. It was organized in 1821, and in 1823 a chapel (the Wesley chapel) was erected in Sewall street. This chapel not having been deeded to the church, but to the Rev. Mr. Fillmore, the pastor, difficulties arose and the society became torn and distracted. For years this condition of affairs was endured, but in 1840 a change ensued. Rev. N. S. Spaulding became pastor of the church. During his pastorate a new house of worship in Union street was erected, which was continued until 1851, when a new and larger house was deemed necessary. The present house was therefore built, and on January 5, 1853, was dedicated. The church in Beverly, and also the Wesley-Chapel Church of Salem, were founded by this parish. The pastors of the Lafayette street Church have been Revs. Jesse Fillmore, Joseph B. Brown, Jefferson Hamilton, S. C. Macreading, Aaron Wait, J. W. Downing, S. G. Hiler, Mr. Bradlee, N. S. Spaulding, Z. A. Merrill, David K. Merrill, Horace Moulton, Phineas Crandall, David Winslow, John W. Perkins, Luman Boyden, A. D. Merrill, Daniel Richards, John A. Adams, Austin F. Herick, John H. Mansfield, Edward A. Manning, Gershom F. Cox, Loranus Crowell, S. F. Chase, D. Dorchester, J. S. Whedon. The present pastor is George L. Collyer. During the pastorate of Mr.



LAFAYETTE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

(SEE PAGE 203.)

Cox the Methodist pastorate was increased to three years' duration throughout the denomination. Previous to that time the pastorate was of only two years' duration.

The Naumkeag Steam Cotton factory, the Forest River Lead mills, the Oil works, the Salem Marine Railway, the Atlantic Car works, and also the City Orphan Asylum, are situated in South Salem.

The Naumkeag Cotton factory was incorporated in 1839. The building of the mills began in June, 1845, on Harbor street, on what was known as Stage point. It first began to card in January, 1847, and to weave in the following February. It then had in operation 29,696 spindles and 642 looms, with an engine of 400 horse power. It employed 600 operatives, to whom it paid in wages \$10,000 a month. It manufactured 5,000,000 yards of cotton cloths in a year. It now employs 73,594 spindles, 1438 looms and a capital of \$1,200,000. An attempt was made to operate here in the manufacture of cotton cloths as early as January, 1826. At this time cotton goods made in Beverly were quite popular, and voters in Salem petitioned for the flats in and adjacent to Collins and Cat coves; also land in the vicinity of Bridge street, Salem Neck and Winter Island, for the purpose of erecting the mills. Joseph Story had petitioned the General Court for a modification of the laws on manufactures, and the above enterprise was entered upon with great energy and zeal. It met, however, with great opposition, which finally compelled the stockholders to vote a discontinuance of the enterprise, much to the injury no doubt, of the business prospects of Salem.

On the site of the Naumkeag mills, the Salem Lead Company, incorporated February 7, 1824, commenced work in 1826. The enterprise was unsuccessful, and in 1835 the establishment was sold at a great loss. The factory was used for the manufacture of India rubber, and for a few years Salem took the lead in the manufacture of rubber goods. The factory was sold again in 1841. In 1826 Francis Peabody established lead works on the eastern side of Lafayette street, near the present residence of George Chase, Esq. He also established the present Forest River Lead mills, on the Forest river road between Salem and Marblehead. The two concerns were sold in 1843 to the present owners of the latter, who discontinued the former. The present Forest River Lead Company was incorporated in 1846. It manufactures white lead and sheet lead.

A sperm-oil and candle manufactory was commenced by Caleb Smith in 1835 to manufacture sperm oil from its crude state. It is now occupied by the Seccomb Oil Manufacturing Company at the foot of Harbor street. It manufactures lubricating and curriers' oil.

Just west of the oil factory is the Salem Marine Railway, the first in the country. The model was brought from Scotland by Thomas Gardner, in the ship "Commerce." The first attempt to take up a vessel was unsuccessful. The vessel was the "Panther" of Boston, Captain Austin. She fell over and became a total wreck.

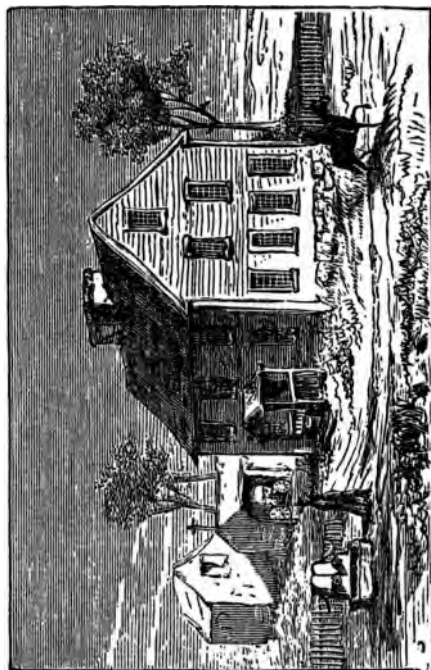
The Atlantic Car works were started a few years ago, but continued only a short time. During their

continuance they manufactured some of the finest cars that were ever put upon rails.

The City Orphan Asylum was established in 1866, by the late Thomas Looby. It was situated just east of the northern entrance of the tunnel, on the corner of Bridge and Washington streets. It was originally called the "Looby Asylum." The building occupied was removed from east of Plummer Hall to make room for the Tucker Daland mansion, now the residence of the family of the late Dr. Benjamin Cox. This building being found insufficiently large to accommodate the demand for admittance, the fine estate of George Peabody Russell, on the eastern side of Lafayette street, between Lagrange street and Lafayette place, was purchased, and the present large brick building erected thereon, for the express benefit of orphan children and indigent old ladies. It is supported by the liberal donations of the public, and it is under the direction of the three Sisters of Charity, of whom Sister Monegan is superioress.

Castle hill, in South Salem, is supposed by some to be the place where Nanapashemet fortified himself against the Tarrantines, and where he was finally killed.


Union bridge crosses South river at Union street near the Naumkeag Cotton mills. It was built in 1847. The causeway at the northern end of this bridge was formerly known as Jeggles Island. It was allowed by the town in 1726-7 to become the foundation of the present Union wharf.



BEADLE'S TAVERN.—(SEE PAGE 214.)

CHAPTER VII.

DERBY STREET.—DERBY WHARF.—CUSTOM HOUSE.—OLD LADIES' HOME.—OLD MEN'S HOME.—MARBLEHEAD FERRY.—HOUSE OF SEVEN GABLES.—PHILIP ENGLISH.—FERRY LANE.—BEVERLY FERRY.—PLANTER'S MARSH.—WINTHROP'S ARRIVAL.—ARABELLA JOHNSON.—POTTER'S FIELD.—FIRST MILLS IN SALEM.—BRIDGE STREET.—CAR SHOPS, JUTE MILL, LEAD MILL AND GAS HOUSES.—ESSEX RAILROAD.—PENNSYLVANIA PIER AND PHILLIP'S WHARF.—STEPHEN C. PHILLIPS.—SALEM NECK.—EARLY FISHERMEN.—CITY ALMSHOUSE.—PEST HOUSES.—WINTER ISLAND.—BLUE ANCHOR TAVERN.—PIRATES.—EARLY FORTIFICATIONS AND BLOCK HOUSES.—U. S. FRIGATE "ESSEX."—OLD MUSTER GROUND.—PLUMMER FARM SCHOOL.—JUNIPER POINT AND THE WILLOWS.—JUNIPER HOUSE.—BAKER'S, LOWELL, AND OTHER ISLANDS.—NAVY OF SALEM IN THE REVOLUTION.—GROWTH OF SALEM POPULATION, ETC., DURING THE PAST CENTURY.—END OF OUR STROLL.

E now return to the northern side of the river and stroll down Derby street. This street, in the commercial days of Salem, was the great street of the city; but with the departure of our maritime glories its greatness vanished. The remains of several of the fine mansions, once occupied by some of our princely merchants of the past, may still be seen on this street.

Just east of Union bridge is Derby wharf, a long wharf extending far out into the harbor. This wharf was commenced by Capt. Richard Derby, and from time to time extended by his children to its present proportions.

At the head of Derby wharf, on the eastern corner of Orange street and facing the harbor, is the pres-

ent Custom House.¹ It is of brick and was built in 1819 by order of Congress. The dimensions of this building (when built) were :—length, forty-eight feet, width, forty feet, two stories and a half high, with a high basement and a storehouse attached which is twenty-eight by seventy feet. A broad flight of stone steps leads from the street to the offices in the first story above the basement. There is a cupola on the roof of the building from which the flag is displayed. A fine carved eagle ornaments the front. Hawthorne has rendered this ancient Custom House classical, in his amusing preface to the “Scarlet Letter,” as Charles Lamb immortalized the South Sea House in his essays. The Custom House occupies the site of a wooden house in which George Crowninshield lived. This house had a cupola, surmounted by an image representing a man looking through a spy-glass.

The Custom Houses of Salem have occupied various places from time to time. We have spoken of the first two² and of two others on Central street.³ As to some other locations of it we learn that it once stood near where the old Neck gate was, at the junction of Fort Avenue and the road leading to the Almshouse; at another time it was in “Blaney’s building,” at about 154 Washington street; again it was near the premises of 261 Essex street.⁴ In 1776 it was on the corner of Essex and North streets. It was afterwards in Central street, then on Essex

¹ See page 22. ² See page 34. ³ See page 131. ⁴ See page 39.

street opposite where the Essex Institute is, then on the corner of Newbury and Essex streets, then on Central street again, and from there removed to its present position. Capt. Charles H. Odell is the present collector.

George Crowninshield was the father of Benjamin W. Crowninshield, who occupied the brick house on Derby street now used for the Old Ladies' Home. President Monroe, when visiting Salem, in 1817, stopped over night in this latter house. Gen. Miller afterwards occupied it, and in 1860 it was purchased by Robert Brookhouse, Esq., and donated to the "Association for the Relief of Aged and Destitute Women." This association was incorporated the same year. Benjamin H. Silsbee, Esq., is president. Miss Mary E. Deacon is matron.

The house on the corner of Derby and Turner streets is now occupied as the "Salem Old Men's Home." This house was built by Penn Townsend, and occupied many years by Hon. J. G. Waters, also by the late William Gavett. The "Home" was the gift of John Bertram, Esq., by whose munificence it is endowed. It was incorporated April 10, 1877. A board of trustees, consisting of thirteen gentlemen, and a superintendent and matron, are chosen annually. The following article from the by-laws denotes the objects of the institution:—

"ARTICLE 9. No person shall be admitted into the Home but those of good moral character and habits, who have resided in Salem for not less than ten years immediately preceding their application for admission, and are not less than sixty years of age, unless by a vote of the Trustees,

not less than nine members of the Board being present and voting unanimously."

Of the present officers John Bertram is president, Joseph A. Goldthwait, superintendent, and Mrs. Goldthwait, matron.

Before the opening of the Lafayette street road to Marblehead, the means of reaching this town were by ferry. The landing of the Marblehead ferry was at the foot of Turner street, on the Salem side, and at Haskell's cove, a little to the west of Naugus head on the Marblehead side, in close proximity to the old Darby fort. This ferry was hired by Philip English in 1699, for three years, and after him Capt. John Calley, of Marblehead, had it for ten years. The fare was twopence for Salem people, and for others "whatever the Court of Sessions should appoint." Calley's boat was fitted to carry horses and carriages. When Marblehead was incorporated, Salem reserved to herself the right of the ferry and the appointment of the ferry-men. The first ferryman was George Wright, who was appointed as early as 1637. Richard Ingersoll was ferryman after Wright; and Ingersoll, together with John Howard, built, in 1662, the house now standing at the foot of Turner street, on the right-hand side and nearest the water.

This house is known as the "House of the Seven Gables," and was the subject of Hawthorne's story with that title. It retains its great fireplace with its iron back, and much more of its original antiquity. It is still in the possession of the Ingersoll

family. Hawthorne was a frequent visitor to the Ingersoll mansion in his younger days, when he was living on Herbert street. Another of his fine sketches, "The Grandfather's Chair," had its origin here. One day Hawthorne was in this house talking with the old lady, "Susie" Ingersoll, when she remarked to him: "this is the house of the seven gables." "Seven gables, seven gables," reiterated Hawthorne, at once thrown into deep thought, "that's just what I want." Not long after, his book bearing that title was produced. The story was written with the evident design of wreaking his vengeance on certain Salem people who were not pleasing to him. The second story originated in a similar manner: Hawthorne was passing an evening in the great old-fashioned parlor of this same house with the Ingersoll family. Mrs. Ingersoll said to him, "Why don't you write something Nat.?" "I haven't any thing to write about," Hawthorne replied. "Write about that old chair," continued the old lady, pointing to an old chair which had been handed down from her English ancestors. Hawthorne at once sought the history of the chair, and together with fiction produced the story of "The Grandfather's Chair." The two gables on the back of the house have been removed because of decay. Otherwise the house presents the same exterior as in the days of Hawthorne. As to the interior, that presents the same general appearance as when built more than two hundred years ago. Of course paint, paper, carpets, etc., have enlivened it somewhat.

Philip English, of whom we have once or twice

previously spoken, lived near the head of what is now English street. Two warrants were issued for him in the witchcraft times, charging him with being a "wizard." On the second warrant he was secured. His wife Mary was also accused of being a "witch." Tradition among her descendants has it that Mrs. English was first locked up in a chamber in the tavern, "Cat and Wheel," which was situated just east of the First Church, and there through the cracks of the floor heard the examination, in the room below, of others accused like herself. Mr. and Mrs. English were sent to Boston, and there imprisoned together nine weeks. From this prison they made their escape to New York, about August 8, 1692, where they remained until the witchcraft excitement was over, and then returned.

The old Beadle's tavern, somewhat noted in the past, stood on Essex street about opposite the head of Pleasant street.

The original road to what is now Beverly bridge, had the general course of Pleasant and Bridge streets. It was but a cart-path, and much of the land on both sides of the entire course was swampy. It was called the "road to the ferry," or "Ferry lane." That portion of the old road which is now Bridge street, with its extension to Winter street, is one of the finest streets in the city. Winter street, a short but broad and beautiful street, leading from Bridge street at the head of Northey street, to the Common, has superseded Pleasant street as the popular course to Beverly. The Beverly ferry had its landing on the Salem side, near the Salem end of

the present bridge, and on the Beverly side about opposite Cox's court, between Quiner's and Preston's wharves. A little of the original look of the old landing on the Beverly side, still remains. This ferry was established December 26, 1636, when it was:—

“Agreed that John Stone shall keepe a ferry to begin this day, betwixt his house upon the north point (Salem), and Cape Ann side (Beverly), and shall give diligent attendance thereupon during the space of three years, unless he shall give just occasion to the contrary, and in consideration thereof he is to have twopence for a stranger and one penny from an inhabitant. Moreover the said John Stone doth agree to provide a convenient boat for the said purpose, betwixt this and the first month next coming after the date hereof.”

In 1639 William Dixey succeeded John Stone at the ferry, and was required to “keep an horse boat,” and to receive as fares “twopence a piece from strangers, one penny a piece from towne dwellers, sixpence a piece for mares, horses and other great beasts, and twopence a piece for goats, calves and swyne.”

The land on the eastern side of the northern extremity of Bridge street was formerly known as “Planter's marsh,” and here the “Old Planters” are supposed to have cut the thatch with which they used to thatch the roofs of their houses. It is doubtless owing in part to the above fact, that some writers have inferred that the first landing place at Naumkeag was in this locality, and that the first houses

were here built. Their further ground for this belief is the account of the arrival of Gov. Winthrop at Naumkeag, taken from Winthrop's Journal. He states that after a long passage, from the 29th of March, to June 12,¹ he saw Salem as the port of destination, and reached an anchorage *inside of Baker's Island*. He came in the ship Eagle, or, as she was named on this voyage, the Arabella, in honor of Lady Arabella Johnson, daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, who was among the passengers in her. Three other ships, the Ambrose, Jewel and Talbot, arrived a few hours after her, and seven others were on the passage hither. Soon after the Arabella had come to anchor, Winthrop came ashore and took Endicott, Skelton and Leavitt on board the ship. The question, therefore, arose as to whether these latter gentlemen were taken from Beverly bridge point, from Salem neck point, or from a more distant point in Salem harbor. After a few hours, Winthrop, Endicott, Skelton and Leavitt, with some of the lady passengers and others, returned to the shore, and Winthrop's journal further states :

"At night we returned to our ship, but some of the women stayed behind. In the mean time (while at the settlement) most of our people (on board of the ship) went on shore upon the land of Cape Ann, (Beverly) which lay *very near us*, and gathered store of fine strawberries."

The next day was Sunday, and on Monday morning the Arabella was "*warped into the harbor*."

¹ June 10, on page 18, refers to their sighting the coast.

Whatever view may be taken of Winthrop's movements, it can afford very little evidence regarding the exact location of Conant's landing-place, as nearly four years had elapsed since Conant came to Naumkeag, and nearly two years since Endicott's arrival. Besides, the settlers had scattered into various localities,—Salem Neck had buildings upon it, and Conant with others had removed to Beverly.

Lady Arabella Johnson died soon after her arrival at Naumkeag. She was buried in what was known as Potter's field, situated near the Planter's marsh. The Rev. Francis Higginson, who died the same year, was doubtless buried at the same place. Potter's field was probably the first ground used by the early settlers for their dead. Its exact location is not known to the writer. The venerable Dr. Holyoke was accustomed to say that the grave of Arabella Johnson was denoted by a brick monument. Some believe this burial-place to have been at the foot of Arabella street, while others locate it in the vicinity of Planter's street, where it is claimed a sandy ridge formerly extended from the upland into the marsh.

The vicinity of Northey and Winter streets was early occupied by tanneries, and on the bank of North river, near the foot of Northey street, stood a wind-mill used for the grinding of bark. Rope-making and tanning were among the principal early manufacturing interests of Salem. Only one of the long, quaint looking rope-walks, so common in the past, remains to-day. It is Chisholm's line and twine factory, situated in South Salem.

The whole of Bridge street, north of Pleasant

street, has been largely built upon and improved during the past twenty-five years. The Eastern Railroad car shops are situated on the eastern side of this street between Lathrop and Osgood streets. They employ a large number of workmen. These shops are owned and operated by the Eastern Railroad corporation. West of the car shops, at the foot of Burnside street, is the Salem Jute factory. The Salem Lead works are situated at the foot of Sanders street. The Salem Gas Light company has two houses, one at the foot of Northey street, and a new house situated on the north-eastern point of the old Planter's marsh. The Salem Lead company was incorporated in February, 1868. Benjamin H. Silsbee is president. It manufactures white lead, lead pipe, etc. The Salem Gas Light company was organized in April, 1850, and supplies the greater portion of the city with light. William H. Jelly is president.

The Essex Railroad crosses Bridge street underneath a wooden bridge near the head of Webb street, and runs parallel with Webb street to Phillips' wharf and Pennsylvania pier. Both of these wharves are situated at the foot of Derby street, in the most easterly part of the city. An extensive coal business is carried on here, where coal is landed from the ships, and sent by rail to inland towns.

Phillips' wharf, latterly the principal wharf in Salem, was built and owned by Stephen Clarendon Phillips,¹ merchant and philanthropist, who was born in Salem in 1801, and lost by the burning of

¹ See pages 22-3.

"The Montreal," on the river St. Lawrence. He was one of the early movers in the building of the Salem and Lowell Railroad. This wharf is now owned by his son, Williard P. Phillips, merchant and politician, who leased it, about the year 1871, for twenty years, to the above railroad.

Pennsylvania pier was built in September, 1873, by the Philadelphia and Reading Coal and Iron company. It is next east of Phillips' wharf, and extends south-easterly into the harbor two thousand feet, or nearly half way across the harbor. There are sixteen feet of water at low tide, at the end of this pier. The company employ in their business, between Philadelphia and Salem, a line of iron steamers, of from 1550 to 1650 tons capacity. They are fine ships of about two hundred and fifty feet in length, and run with great regularity. Ninety thousand tons of coal were landed here during the year ending December 1, 1877, eighty-five thousand of which were sent into the country by rail. The first cargo of coal landed at this pier was by the steamer "Williamsport," on the 29th of March, 1875. Near the extremity of the wharf is a large building used for the storage of coal. This building is known as the "Pockets." It is two hundred feet long, nearly half as wide and fifty feet high, and is supplied with steam apparatus for the hoisting of coal. This company employs on this pier about sixty men, daily.

We have now traversed the city from Liberty hill to Forest river, and to Neck gate from Buffum's corner. We will now complete our stroll with a view of Salem Neck, which is an irregular point of land lying below the town, and extending one mile

in a north-easterly direction. The Neck was occupied by some of our earliest inhabitants at a place called Watertown, on the "point of rocks," and also at Abbot's cove. In 1637 lots were granted here for buildings and the fishing trade. Quite an extensive fishing business was then carried on. The "point of rocks" is now included in the "Rowell farm," which is on the right hand of the road as you enter upon the Neck. Richard Hollingsworth, a noted ship-carpenter, owned land near the "point of rocks," about 1677. The Hawthorne family afterward owned this land, and their house is still standing on the eastern part of Rowell's farm. On "Roache's point," to the left as you enter upon the Neck, stands the City almshouse. It is a substantial brick structure, two hundred feet in length, with two wings about fifty feet wide, and a projection forty feet wide, half of which projection extends beyond the wings. The house is five stories high in front and four stories in the rear. It has two hospitals and one chapel. It was built in 1816. The town's land, which was early used for pasturage, was united with the almshouse, and a fine farm provided which has ever since been worked by the inmates of the house, and so aided its support. The first provision made for the poor of Salem of which we have any knowledge, was the hiring of a house in 1698 for their accommodation. In 1719 a building expressly built for the poor, stood opposite the north-easterly corner of the Broad-street cemetery. Overseers of the poor were first chosen in 1750. In 1771 a new almshouse was built on the north-easterly part of the Common. The present almshouse,

at the Neck, was ready for occupancy November 30, 1816. Paul Upton was the first keeper of it; George Farwell is the present keeper.

The almshouse occupies the site of a pest-house which was built in 1747. This pest-house in 1799 had been discontinued and another one built on the north-east point of the Neck, on what is now known as the Willows. It was burned down some years since. The present pest-house stands on the hill at the left of Fort avenue, and near to the almshouse.

Winter Island lies a little to the south-east of the Neck, and is connected with it by a narrow causeway which was built as early as 1667. Previous to the building of this causeway there was a good passage for vessels between the Island and the Neck. Winter Island and Salem Neck were, in the early days, especially devoted to the fishing business and to ship-building. Quite a village of fishermen occupied the island, which with the fish flakes, presses and fish houses, presented quite a lively appearance. So numerous were the people here in 1679, that John Clifford was licensed to keep a victualling house for their convenience. "This," says Felt, "may have been the origin of the 'Old Blue Anchor tavern,' famed in traditionary story." In 1684 several merchants were allowed to build wharves here, and in 1698 the island had streets on it, laid out and properly named, among them was Fish street. It has from the earliest days been looked upon as a place peculiarly adapted for defence against the enemy, either by land or water. From the settlement of the



LIGHT HOUSE, WINTER ISLAND.

country to 1724, the early commerce was subject to piracy, and the people at home annoyed by the Indians, to the southward and northward especially. English pirates came boldly upon our coast as early as 1682, and continued to plunder till 1705. The Algerine and Tunisian pirates disturbed our commerce in the English Channel for several years from 1640, while the French and Spanish vessels being, or assuming to be, privateers, caused our people trouble from 1680 to 1725. Between 1689 and 1711 the French almost destroyed the fishing fleet of Salem. Whilst all our vessels went more or less armed for defence upon the ocean, our people took good care in fortifying themselves at home.

The first fort, as previously stated, was built near Washington street. The second was built in 1629, at Naugus head, Marblehead side, and was named Darby fort. It was provided with large cannon and a cannoneer. The next fort was commenced on Winter Island in 1643, but not finished until nearly twelve years afterwards. Guns were allowed to be taken from the island in 1641, to be used by Capt. Cakebread¹ in his cruise against the Turks. This shows that there were means of defence here before the building of the fort. In 1667, during the progress of the Dutch war, our people became alarmed at a threatened visit of the Dutch fleet which had ravaged Virginia, and great guns were ordered to the Winter Island fort, with all speed. In 1673 England had declared war for the second time

¹ One authority gives this name as "Brendonke."

against Holland, and through fear again of the Dutch fleet, the above fort was refitted. Leather cannon were used about this time to frighten the Indians. They were light and could be easily dragged through the forests, and to the Indians presented as formidable an appearance as the more deadly ordnance. In 1677 the people of Salem were greatly distressed by reason of the Dutch war. Sixty-one families, numbering 295 persons, together with others from different towns, were relieved by donations from the people of Ireland. About a century and a half later our people had an opportunity to return the kindness. In 1690 the Winter Island fort was repaired, block-houses built, and breastworks were thrown up at the Juniper, the Willows, and on the hill. In 1699 the Winter Island fort was called Fort William. In 1706 two block-houses were erected near the entrance to the Neck, and supplied with several guns. A stockade was also built of about 200 feet in length, and the Neck was intended, quite likely, as a place for retreat in case of an Indian attack upon the town. In 1714 Fort William was equipped with twenty guns. In 1742 breastworks, and a platform for sixteen guns, were erected on the eastern high hill. In 1775 Gen. Henry Lee, commanding the north-eastern division of the country, came to Salem, and with Jonathan Peele, merchant of this place, selected this hill as the place to erect a formidable fort. It was called Fort Lee. Barracks were also built at Juniper point. In 1787 there were three forts here known as Forts William, Lee and Juniper. In 1794, while our relations with

France were threatened with rupture, the selectmen of Salem ceded to the United States, the land where the old fort stood on Winter Island, and as much more on the Neck and Island as might be needed for fortifications. In 1796 Fort William was repaired by the government, and in 1799 its name was changed, by order of the secretary of war, to Fort Pickering. In 1814 these forts were rebuilt under the direction of Maj. Gen. Amos Hovey, and Gen. David Putnam. Forts Lee and Pickering were again rebuilt during our recent war.

The United States frigate "Essex," built in 1799 on Winter Island, as stated on page 141, holds a prominent position in the list of noted American ships. She was the patriotic offering to the service of the country, from the then small seaport of Salem. She was built by order of Congress, but paid for voluntarily by subscriptions from the inhabitants of Salem. William Gray and Elias Haskett Derby headed the subscription paper with \$10,000 each. She was of 850 tons burthen, and with one complete set of sails cost the subscribers \$75,473.59. Her armament was provided by the government. Her total cost when ready for service with twelve months' provisions, was \$154,687.77. Her keel was laid April 13, 1799; she was launched on September 30th following. The advertisement for the wood to build her, read :

"True lovers of the liberty of your country, step forth and give your assistance in building the frigate to oppose French insolence and piracy."

Enos Briggs, her builder, built in Salem fifty-one vessels in all, of 11,500 tons. He died in 1819, aged 73, highly respected for his mechanical skill, his industrious example and his useful life. The Essex was the first United States ship to carry our flag around the Cape of Good Hope and Cape Horn; was the first to capture an armed prize in the war of Great Britain, and when compelled at last to surrender to a superior force, made a protracted and unequal conflict in Valparaiso bay. Few ships in the United States service, with so short a career, have ever been blessed with such a galaxy of commanders—Preble, Barron, Bainbridge, Decatur, Stewart, Cox, Campbell, Smith, and last but not least Porter, father of Admiral Porter. Admiral Farragut, of New Orleans fame, received his first wounds on her deck as a midshipman. After her capture she was entered upon the list of English ships, and in 1833 was used as a convict ship at Kingston, Jamaica. She was finally sold at auction at Somerset House, in 1837.

For many years previous to the last war, Winter Island was used each fall as the muster ground of the militia of Essex county, when the brigade muster system was in vogue. It is now occupied by the Plummer Farm School of Reform for boys. This school was founded by the munificent bequest of Miss Caroline Plummer. It is a school for the instruction, employment and reformation of juvenile offenders in the city of Salem. The amount of the bequest was \$25,000. The fund by judicious management is yearly increased. It is under the charge

of a board of ten trustees, chosen for a term of years by the Mayor and Aldermen. It was incorporated by an act of the Legislature in 1855. The school went into operation September 23, 1870. William I. Bowditch is now president, and Gilbert L. Streeter, secretary.

Salem Neck is now considered the principal summer retreat of the community of Salem, Peabody and Beverly. Salem and Lowell people occupy Juniper point, with a lively and handsome village of summer residences. Through their good taste and the enterprise of the city government under Mayor Williams' administration, in making the Willows exceedingly attractive and improving the avenue thereto, together with the Naumkeag Railway company, which has established a branch road to the Willows for summer travel, the Neck has been converted, from pasturage land, into one of the finest summer retreats on our coast. It had been more or less of a retreat for private parties for some years, but there was neither private nor public shelter for them, save perhaps the old farm house at the fork of the roads to the Willows, Juniper and Winter Island. This house was built about the close of the seventeenth, or the beginning of the eighteenth century, on a farm purchased here by Col. John Higginson, grandson of Rev. Francis, and son of Rev. John Higginson. It was afterwards owned by Capt. Benjamin Ives, then by Capt. Richard Derby, who leased a point on Winter Island, in 1755, for a wharf and warehouse. Capt. Allen next occupied the farm, which included a large portion of the

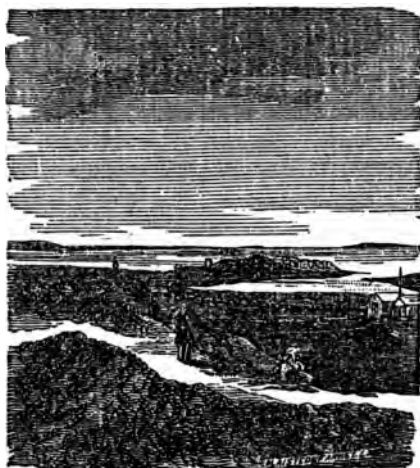
Juniper. It was long known as the "Allen farm." It has since been occupied by Aaron Welch and others still living. It has recently been renovated and is now a public house, known as the "Juniper House."

In 1855-6 a few Boston clerks began to camp during their vacations at Juniper point; finally some of the Lowell people, driven from Marblehead Neck by disagreement with the proprietors there, sought out Juniper and erected a cottage or two. They were followed by others, until the point began to develop itself into a watering-place for residents. In 1873 D. B. Gardner, jr., bought the "Allen farm" of the Dustin heirs, of Penbody, and laid it out into streets, and fine house-lots which are for sale. There are now some fifty or more fine cottages here, and the number increases yearly. The Willows, a point¹ to the north-west of the Juniper, and from which an English man-of-war was cannonaded,² next began to be looked upon in the favorable light which is now attached to it. A pavilion, pagodas, fountains, new roads and eating-houses were built, and everything of an attractive nature about it improved. On pleasant summer days thousands of people come here to enjoy the cooling breezes, and to listen to the music from the band which is often employed to add to the enjoyment. Steamboats, yachts and row boats are always at hand to accommodate parties or individuals. A long wharf, known as steamboat wharf, has been built from what was early known as

¹ Formerly known as Hospital-point. ² See Beverly.

Watch-house point, so called from the block, or watch-house which stood here as late as 1758, and from which when new, our people watched for pirates and other enemies who frequented our coast. From this point a fine view is obtained of the coast, from Marblehead Neck on the right, to Gloucester harbor on the left, with its indentures of harbors, coves and creeks; also the great bay spread out in front, and dotted with its many islands.

Baker's Island was so called as early as 1630, at which time the most of these islands were covered with forest trees. Baker's Island is the largest of the group; it contains fifty-five acres, and is distant about four miles easterly from Watch-house point. After being long appropriated for pasturage, this island was selected, in 1797, as the location for a lighthouse. The two lights nightly displayed here were first shown on January 3, 1798. Lowell Island is the next largest, and contains nine acres. It has a large hotel on it built by the Lowell people some years ago, for a summer retreat. In 1655 it was granted by the General Court to Governor Endicott and his heirs. Its proper name was Cotta Island, the name being derived from that of its owners. This name was afterwards contracted to "Cat" Island, by which name it was long known. A small-pox hospital erected here by the Marblehead people, was burned in 1774 by a mob. House Island, so named because of a rock on it which looks like a building, contains five acres, and is the next largest to Lowell Island. The other islands are known as Eagle, Ram, Coney, Tinker's, two Goose-



SALEM NECK.—(SEE PAGE 227.)


berries and the two Miseries, the whole forming a natural breakwater which protects the main land. The Gooseberries, Ram and Tinker's islands are all that now remain as the property of Salem.

Having now completed our stroll over the most interesting portion of old Naumkeag, let us be seated and rest ourselves inside the pagoda on Watch-house point. Here, as we scan the grand old ocean spread out before us as a mighty field of blue, and drink in the beauty of the present scene, let us imagine ourselves transported back to the days when the coming of pirates, or of the Dutch fleet, or of English men-of-war, was watched from this same point,—when the coming and going of the fishing vessels and the merchant ships made the bay white with fleeting sails.

With the fishing business began the prosperity of Salem, and it is to such men as the Rev. Hugh Peters and Mr. George Corwin, merchant of Salem, that we are chiefly indebted for the success which has crowned this source of our prosperity.

The fisheries, also, raised up a class of hardy seamen, which the Revolutionary war developed into a race of the boldest, most adventurous and skilful sea-kings that the world has ever known. By them Salem was enabled to meet the mistress of the ocean on her own element, and dispute her supremacy.

The Revolutionary war laid the foundations of nearly all the great fortunes of our merchant princes, and increased the population of the town from 4000, at the beginning of the war, to 8000 at the close. The war was immensely popular, and was entered



into with a hearty goodwill by all classes of people. Privateering was made the leading business of the town; even the clergymen regarded it with favor, especially the Rev. Dr. Whitaker, who was directly interested in several privateers, and was frequently seen on the wharf, mixing with the crowd of merchants, sea captains, and other persons concerned in navigation, conversing on the events of the day.

The people of the neighboring towns came flocking into Salem to go privateering. As an instance of the alacrity with which the privateers were manned, more than 100 men signed the articles of the Grand Turk, within three days after the notices were posted. The town was full of sailors; every street swarmed with them, rolling and rollicking along, with their pockets full of money (hard money), singing songs, chewing tobacco, smoking cigars, drinking at all the public houses, playing tricks upon the country-men, and especially upon the country-women who brought berries into town to sell; in any street could be seen sailors trying to navigate with horses, chaises and carts. But all this was in good nature; there was no quarrelling, no thieving, no rowdyism.

The Sun tavern was the great resort of the officers of the privateers. This was their headquarters; here they met to discuss the news, to play cards, and to drink, for all drank in those days, and at nearly all gatherings a well filled punch bowl was an indispensable article.

Every vessel, that could sail tolerably well, was taken up for a privateer. The late Capt. Joseph

White was standing one day, at the commencement of the war, on the Long wharf, in conversation with one of the Cabot brothers of Beverly, recounting the wrongs he had suffered from the British, by the capture of three of his vessels, and now he said he would have revenge and retrieve his fortune by going a privateering, and he proposed to Mr. Cabot to buy a vessel with him and fit her out for a privateer. It was agreed between them to do so. Mr. White bought of Elias Haskett Derby a sloop, called the "Come along Patty," which had been employed in the West India trade, and had been commanded by Capt. James Cheever. Mr. White gave her the name of "Revenge," and fitted her out with ten guns and a crew of fifty men, and went in her himself as commander. This was the first privateer that sailed from Salem in the Revolutionary war.

The navy of Salem, in this war, consisted of 267 vessels, privateers and letters of marque, viz. :

76 ships mounting 1216 guns, and manned by 3648 men.						
100 brigs	"	1100	"	"	"	3300 "
69 schooners	"	552	"	"	"	1656 "
22 sloops	"	176	"	"	"	528 "
<hr/>						
267 vessels	"	3044	"	"	"	9132 "

There were several vessels whose number of guns was unknown, and several more whose number of men was unknown, and it was found that in general the average number of men to a gun was between three and four, and it was nearer to four than it was to three. But three men to a gun is assumed in

the above so as to be on the safer side. The number of men given, large as it seems to be, is really less than the true number. Besides, there are mentioned in an old insurance book of this period several letters of marque as being insured, and of which no particulars are given, and they are omitted from this account, which would, without doubt, bring the number of seamen that sailed during this war out of the ports of Salem and Beverly fully up to 10,000.

In addition to the 267 vessels mentioned above, there were a number of shallops, or small boats, armed with swivels, which cruised in the bay and captured British vessels bound into Boston with military stores for the army there. There was the *Dolphin*, a two-masted sail boat, which was built in the cove that existed formerly at the foot of Central street, where the *Phoenix* building now stands. This boat belonged to Jonathan Peele, who built a long hatch on her, armed her with twelve swivels, six on a side. She would often go out in the morning and before night return, bringing in a prize.

As the wharf accommodations were very limited in Salem at that time, the prize-vessels were anchored in the harbor, and there would often be a large fleet, reaching from Naugus head to Throgmorton's cove.

In 1779, Capt. William Gray learning that a British privateer was lying off our harbor, embarked on board an armed schooner with a company of volunteers and went in pursuit of her, captured her and brought her into port. Many other

daring and worthy exploits of this kind occurred in the early days within sight or hearing of the people of Salem. On March 3, 1776, a naval battle was witnessed, from the church steeples and hills, between a British man-of-war and four privateers. The former outsailed the latter and so escaped.

The private armed vessels of Salem during the war of 1812 were as follows:—

3 ships mounting	54	guns, and manned by	395	men.
3 brigs	" 46	" " " "	" 360	"
21 schooners	" 74	" " " "	" 1180	"
4 sloops	" 13	" " " "	" 185	"
2 launches	" 2	" " " "	" 40	"
5 boats armed with muskets }		" " " "	" 82	"
41	189		2193	

The above made an aggregate of 3405 tons. Of the whole number of square-rigged privateers 66 per cent. were captured. The sloops that sailed from Salem were remarkably successful as a class, and a smaller percentage of them were captured than any other, whilst they were found as fully effective as any other class and could keep the sea as well. None of the schooners distinguished themselves except the *Fame*, *Dart* and *Dolphin*, and these were all built before the war. The *Fame* was especially effective. She and the *Dart* were lost by getting ashore in the Bay of Fundy.

The naval warfare which is here represented as from Salem, was performed equally by the citizens of Danvers, Beverly, Marblehead and Salem. These four towns displayed great zeal in this contest, and

contributed all the officers and a large portion of the crews of the privateers. While all of our naval commanders were distinguished for their bravery, prowess, good seamanship, noble and daring acts of generosity, and for their kindness to prisoners, yet there were some, that seemed to stand out from all the rest, and might be spoken of as distinguished without injustice to the others; thus, Danvers had her Foster, Page and Endicott; Marblehead had her Mugford, Tucker and Cole; Beverly had Daniel Adams, one of nature's noble men, John Tittle, Israel Thorndike, William Woodbury, and "the notorious" Hugh Hill; Salem had John Fiske, Jonathan Haraden, William Gray, the bold John Revell, John Derby, Joseph Waters, David Ropes, Nathaniel West, Simon Forrester, the brave Thomas Simmons and his equally brave Lieut. Joseph Peabody, James Barr of remarkable energy, Samuel Ingersoll, and Thomas Perkins.

A detailed history of Salem on the ocean, both in war and peace, would be most interesting.

The brig Amazon, which sailed for Marseilles, August 20, 1829, was the first vessel to leave the port of Salem without liquor on board.

The population of Salem, at the commencement of the Revolutionary war, was 5337; in the war of 1812, it was about 10,000; in 1840, it was 15,082; in 1860, 22,252 and in 1875, 25,958. By the census taken in 1875 the valuation of Salem was \$26,312,272, of which \$11,988,627 was personal property. The annual value of the productions was \$8,699,427. There were 3883 dwellings and

5923 families. The leading professions were represented by forty-one lawyers, thirty-two clergymen and twenty-four physicians. The principal industries gave employment to about 800 carriers, 338 cotton factory operatives, 328 shoemakers and 230 tan-yard laborers.

In addition to the distinguished individuals of Salem of whom we have spoken, might be mentioned Rev. Peter Thatcher, Hon. Stephen Sewall, Gen. John Glover, Hon. Benjamin Goodhue, Hon. George Cabot, John Pickering, LL.D., Charles Dexter Cleveland, LL.D., John Goodhue Treadwell, M.D., Gen. John Fiske, Nehemiah Adams, D.D., Benjamin Pierce, LL.D., Charles Davis Jackson, D.D., Charles Grafton Page, M.D., Frederick Townsend Ward, Francis Calley Gray, Benjamin Pierce, Josiah Willard Gibbs, LL.D., Henry Felt Baker, William Frederick Poole, Maria S. Cummins, Charles Timothy Brooks, Jones Very, William Wetmore Story, Samuel Johnson, Jonathan Mitchell Sewall, Joseph Orne, Johanna Quiner, John Rogers and J. Harvey Young.

In the early days, the various portions of Salem had their distinctive names, some of which still hang about these localities, for instance: the vicinity of Creek, Norman and Summer streets was "Knocker's hole;" the vicinity of the jail was "Button-hole;" the hollow in Boston street was "Blubber-holler;" beyond the hollow, in the vicinity of the "Big tree," was "Johnny-cake;" around the wharves was "Wapping;" the western portion of Mason street was

"Paradise" and the eastern portion of Forrester street was "Gutter-lane."

Grace Church (Episcopal), which we omitted to mention in its proper place, was built in 1858; consecrated in 1859. It is a Gothic structure, situated on Essex street, nearly opposite Monroe street. Its rectors have been Rev. George D. Wildes, D.D., and Rev. Joseph Kidder. Its present rector is Rev. James P. Franks.

In closing our sketch of Salem we are conscious that we have omitted to mention many things that are of great interest. Volumes might be written concerning other matters that we have merely alluded to. Salem is one of the most interesting cities in the state, and there are few pleasanter places in New England for a residence. It is built largely of wood, but contains many substantial stone and brick buildings. While a large number of its structures and its streets are modern and elegant, there are sufficient vestiges of by-gone generations and departed styles of architecture to give it a peculiar character. With the exception of a few localities through which the tide of commercial activity flows during the busier hours of the day, it unites the quiet of the country with the conveniences of city life. The man of leisure and of taste may find here the charms of polished societies, libraries and scientific collections to aid his mental culture, and the most agreeable scenery in the environs to gladden his eyes when he goes forth to take the air.

DANVERS AND PEABODY.

ATTRACTIVE DRIVE. — DANVERSPORT. — GRANTS TO ENDICOTT, SKELTON, AND HUMPHREY. — SPITE BRIDGE. — THE PLAINS. — CHURCHES. — THE RESERVOIR. — PEABODY INSTITUTE, AND OTHER PUBLIC BUILDINGS. — THE STATE ASYLUM FOR THE INSANE. — DANVERS HISTORICALLY AND STATISTICALLY CONSIDERED. — PUBLIC MEN. — PARRIS HOUSE. — VICTIMS OF WITCHCRAFT. — COLLINS HOUSE. — PEABODY. — MRS. RICHARDSON. — POTTERIES. — PEABODY SQUARE. — SHILLABEE HOMESTEAD. — GEORGE PEABODY: HIS EARLY HOME AND HISTORY. — BELL TAVERN AND MONUMENT. — ELIZA WHARTON. — PEABODY INSTITUTE. — SUTTON REFERENCE LIBRARY. — PEABODY HISTORICALLY AND STATISTICALLY CONSIDERED. — SHIP ROCK. — RETURN TO SALEM.

ONE of the most attractive country drives in the vicinity of the city is through Danvers and Peabody. Passing through North street over the North bridge, with Beverly and the long bridge and the railroad bridge on the right, while the North river with its numerous tanneries stretches away to Peabody and Harmony Grove on the left, we cross the eastern end of Peabody and enter the town of Danvers in that section known as Danversport. Vessels reach this village by way of Bass river, bringing coal for the use of the rolling mills, which form the principal industry of the place. One who has never witnessed the process of working iron may profitably pass an hour within these mills.

We are now on a point of land of more than ordinary historic interest. It extends between two

indentures of water anciently known as Water's and Crane rivers. Here once lived Governor Endicott. The honor of being the first landholder in Danvers is generally conceded to Endicott. He established himself here in 1630, on a grant of land comprising about three hundred acres, described as "a neck of land lying about three myles from Salem, called in the Indian tongue, *Wahquamesehock*," situated between the inlets of the sea, now known as Water's river on the south, and Crane river on the north, "bounding westerly by the maine land." "On a beautiful eminence between these rivers," said Proctor, in his centennial address at Danvers, on June 16, 1852, "Captain Endicott, who as acting governor, was chief magistrate of the colony previous to the arrival of Winthrop in 1630, established his residence." For more than two hundred years the old mansion remained in the Endicott family. From here Endicott, so it is related, used to go to Boston in his shallop to attend the sessions of the government, after it was moved thither. In front of this mansion, some sixty rods, stands the renowned Endicott pear tree, celebrated more for the *time* it has borne than for the *fruit* it bears. Champions of this tree claim that it is the oldest cultivated fruit tree in New England, it having been brought here from old England.

Crossing the stream formerly known as Crane river, we enter Danversport village. This is on another "neck of land," and is situated between Crane river on the south, and Porter's river on the north, and "bounding westerly," also, by the "maine land."

This is the land granted to Samuel Skelton of the First Church, about the time that Endicott received his grant of the adjoining territory. It contained two hundred acres. This section was known for many years as Skelton's Neck, subsequently as New Mills, and now as Danversport.

Speaking of early grants, perhaps this is the most appropriate place to mention still another to one of the Old Planters, John Humphrey. His grant was in the westerly part of the town, that portion now comprised in Peabody, and near Humphrey's pond, on the line between Peabody and Lynnfield. In the midst of this pond is an island whereon the early settlers had a fort, into which they could retreat in case of attacks by the Indians.

Driving on through the Port a short distance we bear to the right and cross Spite bridge which spans Porter's river. This bridge derives its name from the fact of its having been built by the Danvers farmers "out of spite" to the owners of Beverly bridge, when the latter was a toll-bridge and tolls were exorbitant. Continuing along this road a short distance, we turn to the left and drive past the Danvers riding park, where gentlemen speed their trotters, and pedestrians speed themselves, and where the Essex County Agricultural Society occasionally holds its annual fair. Or, instead of pursuing the above course, we might turn to the left, at the Danversport church, and proceed to the Plains over the old county road and through the thickly settled portion of the town. This would take us past the Catholic, Unitarian and Universa-

list churches, and, under the latter, Gothic hall. We now enter the principal settlement of Danvers, known as the "Plains," containing post-office, stores, hotels, depots, newspaper office—"The Mirror,"—and other establishments usually found in a thriving country village.

Danvers has several pretty villages, as attractive as any in Essex county, with their broad, level streets, lined with fine houses and shaded by noble oaks and elms. The town is supplied with pure water from Middleton Pond. The reservoir is located upon Hawthorne hill, one of the highest in the town, thus assuring a good force of water. Even the farmers make use of this abundant supply when in dry seasons their crops begin to wither on the hillsides.

The bounty of the late George Peabody has provided the town with a handsome public edifice known as the Peabody Institute. This building, situated at the "Plains," contains a fine hall and a library of 8,350 volumes. It is surrounded by a park which, in summer, is at once beautiful and fragrant with its thousands of flowers. Near by we notice the pretty town hall, in front of which stands a fine soldiers' monument. Here too, is the commodious station on the Lawrence branch of the Eastern Railroad.

Returning to the main street (Maple) we bear to the left, pass the large Congregational Church, and cross the Newburyport branch of the Boston and Maine Railway; thence proceeding along this road for about a mile, and crossing the Newburyport turnpike, we arrive at the base of Hawthorne hill, whereon stands the State Lunatic Asylum. This is



ENDICOTT PEAR TREE.—(SEE PAGE 240.)

the largest building in Essex county and one of the largest in New England. Hawthorne hill is one of the most elevated in town, and this building is visible for miles and miles across the country and far out to sea. The winding road leading to the summit is as smooth as a gravelled road can be. The slopes are nicely graded and turfed, while around the building at the top of the hill are beautiful flower-gardens. The area owned by the State is $197\frac{1}{4}$ acres, and the extreme elevation is 257 feet above sea level. There are ten sections in the main group, connected by fire-proof corridors. Each of these sections is, in itself, a large building. The structure is four stories in height and is built of brick in the domestic Gothic style of architecture. The administration building is sixty feet in width and ninety-seven feet in length. Immediately in the rear of this, is another building 180 feet long and sixty feet wide. Extending outward from these buildings, are three more on either side, each 147 feet long by sixty-four feet in width, each successive building on a side falling back of the preceding fifty feet, more or less. Lying obliquely to these buildings, and connected with them, are the two extreme sections, each 117 feet long and fifty-six feet wide. The distance from the extreme points of the two buildings most remote from each other, is, in a straight line, 1180 feet. These two extreme wings are for the more excited patients. The interior is finished in superb style, the ceilings and walls being richly frescoed. Nothing that ingenuity could suggest, or money procure, for the comfort and convenience of the unhappy inmates has

been omitted. The asylum is calculated to accommodate about 500 patients. Ascending the tower, on the southerly side, we find ourselves more than a hundred yards above sea level. At our feet repose the numerous villages of Danvers, Peabody, Lynnfield, Wenham and Middleton, while in the distance we see Salem, Beverly, Cape Ann, Marblehead, Baker's and Lowell islands, Lynn, Topsfield and other places.

Our view of Danvers is perfect. We see here at a glance a thriving town that has grown rich from market-gardening, brick-making, and the manufacture of shoes. There are rising 140 farms with 295 farmers; also 101 brickmakers, 522 shoemakers and 335 common laborers. The orcharding exceeds that of any other town in Essex county; 20,000 apple-trees alone are cultivated for their fruit. To this we may add a yearly crop of onions amounting to 14,000 bushels, and other garden produce in proportion. The annual manufacture of bricks often reaches four, and sometimes five millions. Good clay for this purpose is abundant. The gathering of peat from the meadows, for fuel, is also an extensive business; and then there are flourishing carpet-manufactories and iron-works.

Thirteen hundred families, consisting of 6024 persons, dwelling in 1014 houses, make up the sum total of population. The valuation of the town is \$3,341,100 and the productions during the year 1874 amounted to \$2,488,522. Danvers was incorporated as a town on June 16, 1757, and is said to have derived its name from Sir Danvers Osborn, an English nobleman, and at one time a Governor of New York.

On December 31, 1638, it was "agreed and voted (by the people of Salem), that there should be a *village* granted to Mr. Phillips and his company, upon such conditions as the seven men appointed for the town affairs should agree." This was the origin of the name "Salem village," so long applied to the settlement in Danvers. In 1671, the people of this village were released from parish charge to the First Church. They still kept up worship, however, sometimes by means of laymen, and again by regular preachers. Rev. James Bagley was first pastor of the church and began his labors on October 28, 1671. He was succeeded by Rev. George Burroughs who was subsequently executed for witchcraft. The first meeting-house stood very near the site of the present edifice on what was then known as "Watch-house hill." On the 23d of October, by a vote of Salem, the "village" and the "middle precinct" were, "with the consent of the legislature," allowed to become a separate town. The General Court refused to sanction the vote because it would increase the number of representatives, but constituted them a district instead of a town, the act of incorporation dating January 28, 1752. The name Danvers was given the new district at this time. The subject of making it a separate town was brought before the legislature again, before long, and, on June 16, 1757, the act incorporating the town of Danvers as a separate municipality was passed. On May 18, 1855, the town was divided into Danvers and South Danvers. South Danvers was given the name of Peabody on April 13, 1868.

The first town meeting was held on March 4,

1752, in the meeting-house of the north parish. The order for this meeting began thus: "These may notify the inhabitants of Salem alious Danvers, etc." Daniel Eppes, Esq., was moderator, Daniel Eppes, jr., clerk, and James Prince, treasurer. Daniel Eppes, jr., Capt. Samuel Flint and Deacon Cornelius Tarbell were chosen selectmen. Among the names of the other officers chosen at that first meeting were many so familiar to the old town at the present time,—such as Putnam, Preston, Derby, Andrews, Proctor and others. The population at this time was about 500 and the number of houses 140.

Speaking of the first settlers of these two towns, Hon. Charles W. Upham says: ¹ "Their descendants remain in large numbers on the same area to-day. Perhaps it would be safe to say that in no district of our county have old families been so numerously preserved. Very many now occupy lands which their first American ancestors cleared."

This town has furnished three members of Congress, all of whom became men of note. They were Samuel Holton, Nathan Reed and Daniel P. King. It has given to the military service of the country such men as General Israel Putnam, General Gideon Foster and General Moses Porter: and in the wars of the revolution, of 1812, that with Mexico in 1846, and in the late civil war, Danvers did her whole duty, both in the number of men and in the quality. Samuel Holton was a man of extensive public service. Born

¹ Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. 10, p. 1.

in Danvers in 1736, he soon became a doctor of medicine. At the age of thirty, he was elected a representative to the General Court. In 1775 he was made major of the first regiment in Essex county; then elected to a seat in the Provincial Congress at Watertown; Judge of the Court of Common Pleas; Justice of the Court of General Sessions, and Chief Justice of the same; delegate to assist in framing the Confederation; delegate to a convention to frame a State constitution; representative in Congress and President of Congress; presidential elector twice, and finally Judge of Probate for Essex county.¹ Israel Putnam's history is too well known to necessitate any extended sketch of it here. He was celebrated for quickness of decision, rapidity of execution and undaunted courage. He was born in an old house near the foot of Hawthorne hill on the Newburyport turnpike. Here he lived until the age of twenty-one when he married and moved to Connecticut. When the news of the battle of Lexington reached him he was ploughing. Turning loose his horses, he took his coat from a tree where it hung and went to join the army, serving first at Bunker Hill, where he was second in command. He continued throughout the war one of the first generals.

Having tarried thus long to recount the history of the old town, we will now descend on the side opposite to that which we ascended, and taking the Peabody road start on our return; but do not

¹ Hanson's History of Danvers, p. 188.

think that we have yet seen all there is to be seen in the town. A short drive finds us at a spot known the world over—a spot which will last as long as a printed page or tradition shall preserve any record of the past. It is no less than the site of the old Parris house, where the Rev. Samuel Parris, fourth pastor of the First Church in Danvers, once lived. Here on this spot, in the family of Mr. Parris, Salem witchcraft had its birth. Bancroft says that the origin of this strange delusion was in a desire on the part of Parris to wreak vengeance on certain of his people, between whom and himself there existed a bitter feud. This delusion has been discussed elsewhere in this work and need not be extended here. Among the victims who had a home in Danvers were Rev. George Burroughs, Giles Corey and wife, John Proctor and wife, Rebecca Nurse, George Jacobs, Sarah Goode, and John Willard. Giles Corey's residence was near the crossing of the Salem and Lowell and Newburyport and Boston Railroads, about 300 feet west of the crossing and close to the track of the Salem and Lowell road, on the south side. The estate is now owned by Benjamin Taylor. The vestiges of the cellar are still visible. Giles Corey *lived previously, for some time, in the town of Salem*; he sold his house there and built his farm-house in Danvers, which was 20 feet long, 15 feet wide and 8 feet stud.¹

Still continuing on down this road through a

¹ C. W. Upham.



PARRIS HOUSE.—(SEE PAGE 249.)

pleasant farming community and through the village of Tapleyville, we notice many gambrel-roof houses, unusual for a newly-built village. But these houses were not built here; they were moved hence from Salem for the occupancy of the people employed in the Tapleyville carpet factories. We cross the upper part of Crane river at this point; on the right, just beyond the river, is the site of the Rebecca Nurse house, another landmark to remind us of the superstitious folly of our Puritanic ancestry. Rebecca lived here when she was charged with witchcraft, and from here she was dragged to Salem, tried, condemned, sentenced and executed.

A little further along the road so rich with landmarks of the past, we find the old Parris house itself, the identical house in which Rev. Mr. Parris lived when he accused his Indian servant Tituba of being a witch, and "cruelly treated her." The old house—now thoroughly weather-beaten and evidently nearly ready to "tumble down"—is used for the storage of sage. Just beyond here, on the right, is the historic Collins house, used by Gen. Gage as a headquarters and "summer residence," about 1774, when he was Governor of Massachusetts. It is as grand and imposing to-day as in the days when its halls resounded with the clanking of the arms of brilliantly uniformed officers of "His Majesty's army," and the gardens and lawns surrounding are even more beautiful. "This house," says Hanson's history of Danvers, "was built by Robert Hooper, and subsequently owned by Judge Collins." It is now occupied as a summer residence by Mr. Francis Peabody, of Salem.

Leaving the Collins house, we continue our journey along this road and soon enter the town of Peabody. The eminence on our right is Pleasant hill, formerly known as "Hog" hill. There is one road extending the entire length and terminating on the north-westerly end, so that those who go must return by the same route. On the very top of this hill is a homestead, now owned by Captain Charles Endicott of Salem, the nearest living descendant of Governor Endicott. Another beautiful and romantic place along the road, which we drive, is the Rogers estate, which stands back from the road on the right some distance, and is reached by a drive shaded by noble elms.

The next point worthy of note is the spot where a Mrs. Richardson once lived, and where she established the first bakery ever known in these parts. Her house stood on the left of this road, and the spot is marked only by a rude heap of bricks. Here the good old lady baked her bread and then drove to Salem where she sold it. It is related by her descendants, that, in 1775, she witnessed the burning of Charlestown from the top of Buxton's hill, the highest land in town and which lies to the right of Andover street. Continuing down this street to the "Pine tree," we turn to the right into Central street. The country through which we have been driving is entirely a farming section of the town. We now enter the village, a very pretty one by the way, with many elegant residences and fine streets.

Time was, when, on either side of Central street, were numerous potteries for the manufacture of earthenware, familiarly known as Danvers china,

but there is only one manufactory of the kind now remaining here, and it is the only one in the town. Central street leads us past the town house, on Stevens street, to Peabody square. Here we have the depot of the Lawrence branch of the Eastern Railway, the South Reading Railway, and the Salem and Lowell road. Here too is the South Church which occupies the same spot as did the first church ever built in the town. This is the fourth edifice that has been erected here: one was torn down because of old age, another burned, and still another was sold to the Methodists and moved to Washington street. Here is the post office, the hotel, the newspaper offices—"Press" and "Reporter," the former edited by C. D. Howard, and the latter by S. C. Bancroft—the local court, the police station, and shops and stores such as are found in all prosperous villages.

Driving directly across the square into Foster street, we notice to the right, on Chestnut street, the large newly-built Catholic church, and between the church and square on Lowell street, the handsome brick building for the accommodation of a large portion of the fire department. Here, in this square, near the site of the depot, stood, about 1630, the first mill ever erected in this country.

Continuing along Foster street to its junction with Washington street, we follow the latter up the hill, past the S. C. Bancroft engine house and as far as the Shillaber homestead, the birthplace of B. P. Shillaber, Esq. (Mrs. Partington). This is very near to the line between Lyun and Peabody, and we

will retrace our steps, leaving Foster street on the left, and following Washington street until we come to a two-story yellow house standing on the northerly side of the street. This house was the birthplace and early home of George Peabody, the banker and philanthropist.

George Peabody was born here on the 18th day of February, 1795. He began commercial life in the grocery store of Capt. Sylvester Proctor, in 1807, being at the time only eleven years of age. He remained there until 1810, and then went to Thetford, Vt., where he remained for about a year, when he became a clerk in the store of his brother, David Peabody, in Newburyport. In a short time the great fire broke up David's business, and George was again out of work. In 1812, he accompanied his uncle, Gen. John Peabody, to Georgetown, D.C., where the two conducted business for two years. At the age of nineteen, George took the entire management of the business of Mr. Elisha Riggs, a wealthy merchant of Georgetown, becoming junior partner. The house was removed to Baltimore in 1815, and subsequently branches established in Philadelphia and New York. Mr. Riggs retiring and being succeeded by Samuel Riggs, the firm became Peabody, Riggs & Co. During these years George Peabody was supporting his widowed mother and orphan brothers and sisters. He made several voyages to Europe, and finally sailed for London on February 1, 1837, where he resided during the remainder of his life engaged in banking, and amassed a princely fortune. He returned to this country only twice, in



GEORGE PEABODY.—(SEE PAGE 254.)

1857 and in 1866. After his death his mortal remains were sent home to be laid at rest in native soil.

As he was a great accumulator so he was a generous distributor, giving away more, probably, than any other man who ever lived in the world. Among his larger donations was the sum of \$2,500,000 to the poor of London, \$2,000,000 to the southern educational fund, \$1,400,000 to the Baltimore Literary Institute, \$200,000 to the Peabody Institute, Peabody, \$150,000 each, to Harvard College, Yale College, and the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem, and \$100,000 to found the Peabody Institute, Danvers. Besides these vast sums he gave away hundreds of thousands of dollars — some publicly and much privately. So great a philanthropist and benefactor was he, that both England and the United States united in giving him an imposing public funeral. England sent home his remains in her greatest war-ship — the mighty "Monarch" — and this country accompanied it with its great naval vessel, the "Plymouth," and sent two iron-clads to Portland to receive them. The body was landed at Portland amid imposing ceremonies, and from there taken to Salem and interred in Harmony Grove with such ceremonies of respect as only a native town, a native commonwealth, and a native country, united, could pay to the memory of an honored son.

Having tarried so long to recount the virtues and noble deeds of this great philanthropist, we must hurry on to the terminus of Washington street where it intersects Main street. At this point stands the monument erected by the citizens of Danvers, to the

memory of the men of Danvers who fell at Lexington and Concord, numbering one-sixth of all who fell on the American side on that memorable day. The monument is built of hewn stone, 22 feet high and 7 feet broad at the base. It was completed in 1887 at an expense of about \$1,000.

It is related how they assembled on this spot on the morning of the 19th of April, 1775, and, bidding their loved ones farewell, went forth to battle in defence of their liberties—those liberties which their ancestors braved the hardships of the wilderness to secure. They marched over the road to Lexington, a distance of fifteen miles, in four hours, under the lead of Gen. Gideon Foster, then a captain.

On the easterly corner of these streets stood, many years ago, a famous old building known as Bell Tavern, made memorable by many events which transpired within its walls, but perhaps more than all else from having been at one time the abiding place of Elizabeth Whitman, better known as "Eliza Wharton," from a book written by "Hannah Webster" (Mrs. Foster), in which Miss Whitman's strange career was distinctly outlined. With all her faults she was a woman who bore every burden, whether self-imposed or otherwise, with the fortitude of a heroine. This Bell Tavern was then on the great thoroughfare from the east and north to Boston. The old signboard promised "entertainment for man and beast." The tavern was a sort of English coffee-house where the news was related and public affairs of grave importance discussed, and where public events were celebrated.

Very near here is the Peabody Institute, established and maintained on a fund of \$200,000 donated by George Peabody. It was founded in 1857. The building is two stories in height, built of brick, with very little outward ornamentation. On the first floor is located the library of nearly 16,000 volumes, with accommodations for many thousands additional. In this room is the painting of Queen Victoria, painted on a sheet of gold, the colors being burned in. It was "the gift of Her Majesty to Mr. George Peabody," having been presented in person, and in turn presented to the Institute by Mr. Peabody. Two large gold snuff-boxes of unique design and skilful workmanship, also donated by Mr. Peabody, adorn this room. On the second floor is a large lecture hall, finished and furnished in superb style, and capable of seating about a thousand people. The wall at the rear of the platform is adorned by a life-size painting of Mr. Peabody, which is pronounced to be an admirable likeness of the man.

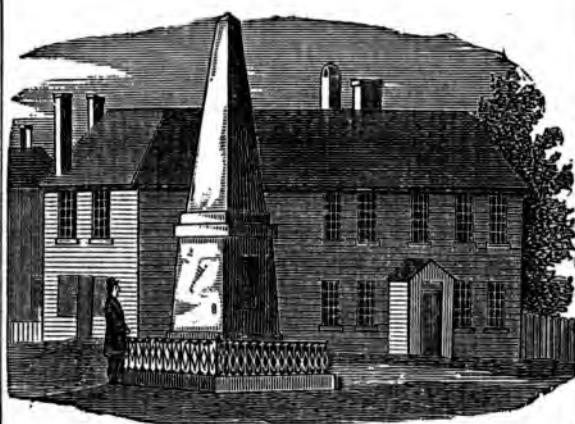
In the rear of this hall is the "Sutton Reference Library," founded in 1869, by Mrs. Eliza Sutton, as a memorial to her son, Eben Dale Sutton, who died in his youth. This library is composed strictly of reference books, and contains some 950 volumes. The room has probably no superior in the libraries of this country for richness of finish. A likeness of the youth, in memory of whom the devoted mother founded the library, adorns the south side of the room. The large brick dwelling on the opposite side of the street is the residence of Mrs. Sutton, the benefactress to whom the town is entitled for this invaluable addition to the Institute.

Before proceeding farther we shall find it advantageous to glance at the town in a statistical point of view. Peabody is a town of 8066 inhabitants, 1720 voters, 1300 dwellings, and 1821 families. It is a thriving place, the manufacture of leather being the principal industry. About 1750, Joseph Southwick commenced the business of tanning in tubs or half-hogsheads, since which time it has grown to gigantic proportions.

There are in the town 864 curriers and 198 tannery laborers, besides 133 morocco dressers, and 200 shoemakers. The manufactories are mainly along the banks of North river, on the borders of, and extending into, Salem. But the figures here given relate solely to so much of the business as lies wholly within Peabody. There are thirty-five establishments for the manufacture of leather, in which is invested a capital of \$837,740, producing, annually, goods to the value of \$3,086,613, and \$60,000 additional of morocco. The manufacture of skivers sheep-skins, linings and shoe-soles gives an additional product of about \$200,000, making a total of \$3,346,613. Forty-three engines, with a total of 2187 horse-power, supply the motive power of this settlement of leather factories.

Besides these manufactories there are extensive glue manufacturing establishments, slaughter-houses, and the like. Farming is another extensive and profitable pursuit, in which some 350 persons are engaged.

The total valuation of the town is \$6,181,350, and the annual value of the productions is \$4,738,310.



BELL TAVERN AND MONUMENT.

(SEE PAGE 257.)

The figures here given appear abundantly sufficient to substantiate the statement, that Peabody is peculiarly a thriving town.

About the only natural curiosity in town is "Ship Rock" on the line of the South Reading Branch Railway, and which may be seen high up on the hill to the right soon after passing Peabody village. It is reputed to be the largest boulder standing above the earth in New England. Its length is forty feet, breadth thirty, and thickness twenty. It resembles the hull of a ship and bears marks of the glacial period. The rock is now the property of the Essex Institute.

For all purposes, save that of municipal government, Peabody is part and parcel of Salem, being but an extension of that city, and being also closely connected with it in all matters of business. The two places are connected by the branch railroads elsewhere mentioned, and also by the street railway, which runs from Peabody square through Salem to Beverly.

There is very little more for us to see in this town, and limited space precludes more extended statements of past and present. So we turn our steps towards home by way of Main street, Peabody, passing on the way the old cemetery where a rude stone marks the grave of "Eliza Wharton;" thence down Boston street in Salem and through Essex street to the heart of the city.

MARBLEHEAD.

SEPARATED FROM SALEM.—POPULATION AND VALUATION.—HOW REACHED.—TOPOGRAPHY.—INDUSTRIES.—EXTENT OF FISHERIES.—PRODUCT OF FARMS AND MANUFACTORIES.—ABBOT HALL.—PATRIOTISM.—MUGFORD, GLOVER AND GERRY.—CROOKED STREETS.—AS A SUMMER RESORT.—THE NECK.—LANDMARKS.—SKIPPER IRESON.—GREAT FIRE IN 1877.

Not far away we saw the port,
The strange, old-fashioned, silent town,
The light-house, the dismantled fort,
The wooden houses, quaint and brown.

The windows, rattling in their frames,
The ocean roaring up the beach,
The gusty blast, the bickering flames,
All mingled with our speech.

THUS sang the poet Longfellow, in 1849, of old Marblehead, that grand old town, whose record for sturdy patriotism, unflinching courage and true nobility, will last so long as history itself; so long as her rocks and sea shall remain and clouds and sunshine deck them with their thousands of varying colors. In a work of this kind it would be utterly useless to attempt a portrayal of her record which should be commensurate with its deserts. It is to be hoped that some of her many own gifted sons will one day perform that task. The history of our country, and especially

of this Commonwealth is full of the work of the men of Marblehead, and it only needs to be sifted out and arranged to give her such a memorial as she deserves. Our record must necessarily be brief. It can only mention the important events.

Marblehead was detached from Salem, of which it formed a part, on May 2, 1649. It contained, at that time, 44 families. At the present time, there are 1881 families, with 7677 inhabitants, dwelling in 1219 houses. The valuation of the town is \$4,058,610, and the value of the productions amounts to over one and a half million dollars annually. A pleasant ride of about four miles due south from Salem, lands the visitor in the very heart of the town. If it is desired to reach it from Boston, it may be done in a ride of sixteen miles, by changing cars at Lynn, and passing through the delightful town of Swampscott. There are two distinct parts to the town. The main portion, or the village, lies at the head of a small arm of the sea which makes into the land about half a mile, and also extends around to the north, separating the harbor from Salem harbor. To the south, and just across the harbor, lies the high peninsula known as Marblehead, or "Great" Neck. The Neck is devoted exclusively to summer resorts, many fine cottages being erected there, and also two small, but good hotels. The rural section of the town extends due south-west about three miles to Swampscott line. Marblehead harbor is one of the deepest on the Atlantic coast, but is poorly protected. The pursuits of the people are shoe-manufacturing, market

gardening and fishing. Formerly, the last named, now the smallest, was the most extensive of the three pursuits. It was, in fact, almost the sole business of the inhabitants. But, as in Manchester and other towns, it is now a mere trifle. Just previous to the breaking out of the war of the Revolution, the fisheries were extensive. Marblehead vessels were known in almost every harbor, and its sail whitened nearly every sea. The daring of its seamen was world-renowned. And as late as 1837, even, there were 55 vessels belonging to the port engaged in this pursuit, the total tonnage being 4603. The cod-fish caught that year amounted to 49,403 quintals; the mackerel to 243 barrels. Five hundred sturdy men were employed in this business. The same year the town manufactured over one million pairs of shoes, employing nearly 1200 operatives. At the present time, it has but two vessels in the coast-wise trade, and 14 engaged in the fisheries. There are in the town but 116 fishermen and 46 mariners. There are several extensive shoe manufactories, and the productions in this line greatly exceed those of 1837. But owing to the extensive use of machinery there are fewer persons employed, being now not much above eleven hundred. There are only about 180 farmers and farm-laborers, but the productions of these farms are very extensive, and in quality equal any thing taken into Boston markets. As many as 24,000 bushels of onions are grown here in one season, together with 5769 bushels of carrots, 3830 bushels of turnips, and 1800 bushels of beets. The seed-farm of Hon. James J. H. Gregory, just outside

of the village, is one of the finest in this section. No visitor to the town should fail to see it.

There are two National banks and one Savings bank ; a high school and several intermediates and primaries ; a good newspaper—"The Messenger"—and eight churches. The school-houses, like many other buildings of the town, are old and weather-beaten, and in many instances inadequate to their mission. Through the bequest of a generous native of the town—Benjamin Abbot—a beautiful public building has been erected on Marblehead Common. Mr. Abbot's bequest amounted to over \$100,000 ; and the hall cost \$75,000. The sum of \$20,000 was set apart for a library and reading room. Abbot hall was dedicated on Wednesday, Dec. 12, 1877, the oration on the occasion being delivered by Hon. Edward Avery of Boston.

Marblehead, like Salem, may have been slow at times. It never moved in any matter of improvement until after nearly all its sister towns. Often it was at "swords points" with Salem or some neighboring town. But when the call of duty came ; when any sister municipality was in danger, or in trouble ; when the country called : no town could so quickly forget all differences ; none more readily respond to the call.

"Never yet to Hebrew seer
A clearer voice of duty came."

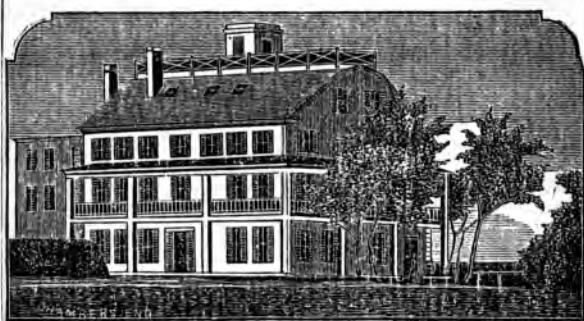
"The old town is and always was loyal to the core." In the war for American Independence, in the war of 1812-14, and in our late civil strife, she

poured out her best blood, and none better ever coursed through the veins of men. Her sons knew not fear, whether on the field of battle, or riding the tempest-tossed sea; or in the civil strife. They responded to the call of each alike. When, in 1861, the first call for troops came, Marblehead received her notice late in the afternoon. At 8 o'clock on the following morning, before another man had put in his appearance, one of her three companies was in Faneuil Hall, Boston, ready to proceed to the front. The other two arrived an hour later. When the war for independence was over, it appeared that Marblehead had dwindled from a tonnage of 12,000 to 1,500; from 1,200 votes to less than 500! There were five hundred widows and more than one thousand orphans! Such in brief is the story of the old town's devotion to the country and the cause of freedom. She has given to that country many men whose names are inseparably linked with the brightest pages of its history, and whose memory neither would willingly let die.

Among the earliest was Capt. James Mugford, the captor of the British powder-ship in Massachusetts bay, on May 17, 1776, and who was killed on the same day while returning home. The citizens never forgot him, and on May 17, 1876, dedicated to his memory, and the memory of those who fought with him, a monument worthy of such a deed. This monument stands at the junction of Essex and Pleasant streets. The address of the occasion was delivered by the Hon. Geo. B. Loring of Salem, who, in his eloquent peroration, said :

"How true has this town, the birth-place of Muford, been to his example and to all her heroic traditions. The faithful performance of her duty in the war of the revolution has been an incentive to succeeding heroism in great critical events which have followed. It was the sons of revolutionary sires whom Glover led, who manned the frigate Constitution and added the names of Prince, and Russell, and Cowell, to the bright constellation which already shone for her in our heavens. From Marblehead a fleet of privateers, organized as an arm of the navy of the United States, sailed forth and swept the high seas. She impoverished herself for this second war, and when it closed she could count her illustrious dead by the hundreds. History has recorded to your everlasting honor that the men of Marblehead were the first to reach Boston in April, 1861, on their way to defend the capital of the republic. It was a Marblehead man, who, catching the first sound of danger to the flag, left his work but half performed, and arming himself for still bloodier scenes, rallied his men and rushed to the conflict."

Glover was a brigadier general in the American army during the Revolution. He led the line in Washington's famous "crossing of the Delaware," and conducted Burgoyne's army through New England after its surrender. Elbridge Gerry was a member of the Continental Congress, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, Vice-President of the United States, and Governor of Massachusetts. Among others of equal merit, if less famous, were Azor Orne, Edward A. Holyoke, Isaac Story, Joseph Story, LL.D., Rev. Samuel Sewall, John Gallison, and Samuel Hooper. There is a solid common sense about the old Marbleheaders; their own sound intelligence speaks for itself wherever they go.



CLIFTON HOUSE.—(SEE PAGE 271.)

Of course the ancient Marbleheaders did some queer things in the earlier days, as did the inhabitants of other towns. No doubt it was perfectly proper to fine John Gatchell ten shillings, in 1637, for building on town land, and doubtless his hair needed a barber's attention or the town would not have voted, as the records show it did, that one-half of the fine be abated "in case he should cutt off his long har off his head." As Salem had its witchcraft delusion so Marblehead had a small-pox fright, and, in the seventeenth century, when the contagion raged there, the law regulating the size of dogs was enforced. All dogs above or below the regulation size were killed from fear that they would carry the contagion. Honesty was secured by requiring the trustees of an appropriation to deposit the money in one chest with two different locks and keys, the chest to be left in charge of one trustee and the keys to be held by the other two, and the chest not to be opened except in the presence of all three. This was an old "notion" but it would not be a bad law to have all over the country even in these modern days.

One of the curiosities of the village is its crooked, meandering streets. The stranger can never tell where he will "turn up" when he starts into a street. The town was evidently settled without regard to streets or boundary lines, each settler locating on some ledge or rise of ground wherever he pleased. Some houses stand north and south, others east and west, and so on through all the points of the compass. One writer says that this incongruity of set-

tlement arose from the main streets running along the valleys, of which there are six or seven, and the houses having been built on the rising ground on either side. To those who have never seen the town we can only describe it by remarking that it has very much such an appearance as we are told a town has after a shaking up by a first class earthquake. Ten thousand "streaks" of lightning would hardly make such devious windings. However, the town records make no mention of either calamity, so it is to be presumed that neither ever happened. Much has been said about the "brogue" of a genuine Marbleheader, but there is very little of it to be heard now.

Marblehead has had but few poets. This is singular, when one remembers how much there is to inspire in her rocky shores, and romantic history, and picturesque town. It has, however, been well embalmed in history by America's best poets. Longfellow wrote "Fire of Driftwood" here on the beach near old fort Sewall. Lucy Larcom wrote "Hannah Binding Shoes" in Marblehead. All remember it, where Hannah is "sitting, stitching in a mournful mood." Holmes and Whittier have also immortalized it in their matchless verse. Hawthorne's "Foot-prints on the Sands" had its birth here.

As a Summer resort, Marblehead has no superior on the New England coast. Its bold and rocky shores projecting far out into the open sea; its cool, pure and invigorating air; its beautiful country; its solid roads, and its quiet, peaceful ways: all tend to make it a "perfect paradise" for such as seek

genuine rest and recreation. And those who visit the place, though containing among their number many of the wealthy and cultured, come for this purpose and not for show. The three hotels—the Atlantic and Samoset on the Neck, and the Clifton House, near the Swampscott line, are fashioned much after the old town itself, and partake of its ways. They are neither grand nor gaudy; but they are solid, substantial and comfortable. The Clifton, which has long been under the direction of Mr. B. P. Ware, jr., is one of the oldest established houses on the coast. The private cottages are none of them showy. In fact, aside from a few newly built ones, there are none such as Swampscott or Cape Ann can show. But there are none more pleasant or comfortable. The residences of Mr. D. R. Bickford and Hon. J. J. H. Gregory on the northeastern shore are among the handsomest; also those of the Crowningshields near by, and of Mrs. Kimball, and Mrs. Gordon, and Hon. W. D. Northend, on the Neck.

Marblehead, like Salem, is rich in landmarks of the past. It would require a volume of itself to describe these and give their history. There is the Mugford monument on Pleasant street near the Eastern depot; the soldiers and sailors monument on Mugford street; the old North Church, rich in historic associations, built partly of granite from the ledge on which it stands; St. Michael's (Episcopal) Church, built in 1714, and still in a good state of preservation, and serving the Episcopalians of Marblehead as a place of worship; and whose second pastor, the Rev. David Mosson, subsequently moving to Virginia, had the distinguished honor of

marrying Mr. George Washington and Mrs. Martha Custis; the town house, built in 1728, on the spot where the "gaol and cage" once stood; the old powder house, with its interesting history and fascinating romance; parson Barnard's old residence, built in 1720; the house in which Elbridge Gerry was born; the birth-place and early home of Judge Story; the early home of good old parson Holyoke, who left Marblehead to take charge of Harvard College, and win fresh laurels; the old burial ground, with its quaint tombstones bearing the oddest of inscriptions, and the humble monument which tells to the stranger, the story of the terrible gale and shipwreck of September 19, 1846, when 65 sons of Marblehead found a watery grave, leaving 43 widows and 155 fatherless children. Then there is the famous old Lee house, built by Hon. Jeremiah Lee in 1758, at a cost of £10,000. It was magnificently furnished, and it is related that large numbers of slaves were kept constantly employed burnishing its oak and brass. Here Washington was received when he visited New England, after the Revolutionary war; here, too, Lafayette received the attentions of hundreds of admirers. But the glory has departed from the old mansion, and, like nearly all of our American landmarks, it has been leased "for lucre's sake," being now occupied by banking institutions. Where Marblehead will entertain presidents and princes when they shall come again, no one can tell. But after all, is there any need of borrowing trouble about it, considering how small probability there is of presidents or princes ever again visiting the town?

Let us not forget, among all this recounting of grandeur, the home of the humble Benjamin Ireson. A "much abused" man was Skipper Ireson. Even the poet Whittier did him injustice (unintentional of course) in his ballad about the shipwreck. But fortunately for the good old skipper, the people of Marblehead have resented every attempt to cast reproach on his fair name. They indignantly deny that he deserted a sinking ship, and maintain that, on the contrary, the crew, while the skipper was asleep below, set sail for home and then heaped all the blame on him. But there is another side to the story. The defenders of the crew maintain that the men misunderstood Ireson's reasons for not allowing them to go to the rescue of the sinking ship. His reasons were, that it would be sure death to make the attempt, thus imperilling the lives and property under his charge. Doubtless both skipper and men meant right, and if they erred it was an error of head and not of heart. Ireson was, however, tarred and feathered and conveyed out of town. So, too, we must not neglect the fishing wharves, once busy places, but now very much deserted. Tucker's wharf, with its picturesque steps and precipitous banks adjoining, should not be overlooked.

Towering above all these links in the chain which unites the history of the past with the present, and doubtless will unite all with the eternity of the future; far above all these humble monuments of our modest ancestor, and marking the royal onward march of progress, is that noble pile of masonry on

yonder hill—Abbot Hall. Through the mists of the early morning, or the haze of the noonday, or the faint glimmering of the deepening twilight, the mariner, far out on the ocean, beholds its tall "spire whose silent finger points to heaven," and knows, better than any light-house can tell him, that he is nearing the rugged coast of old Marblehead. But here let the record of the good old town rest until time and space, and ability born of the devotion of a native, shall give it its place in history.

Since the preparation of the Marblehead portion of this book, the town has been visited by a terribly destructive fire. For a time it seemed that the whole course of the town would be changed, so that the descriptive portion of this article would have to be rewritten. But in a few months, it became plainly evident that the recovery from the blow would be rapid, and that the prosperity of the place would be only temporarily checked. It seemed advisable, therefore, to leave this sketch as first written.

This fire broke out about two o'clock on the morning of Monday, June 23, 1877, in the rear of the Marblehead Hotel, on Pleasant street. It quickly extended to the south and east, burning over some eight acres of the business portion of the village, and destroying seventy buildings and nearly every shoe manufactory in town. A thousand persons were thrown out of employment; hundreds were rendered homeless. The loss amounted to between four and five hundred thousand dollars, and the insurance to something below three hundred thousand.

BEVERLY.

LOCATION.—FIRST SETTLERS.—BEVERLY BRIDGE.—EASTERN RAILROAD AND STAGE COACHES.—FIRST HOUSES.—RYAL SIDE.—POSTAL CENTRES.—NAME OF TOWN.—INDIAN VILLAGE.—EARLY TOWN OFFICERS.—FIRST COTTON MILL.—HILLS.—BROWNE'S FOLLY.—FINE VIEWS.—STREETS.—PONDS.—WATER WORKS.—CHURCHES.—FORTS.—MUDDY BROOK MASSACRE.—CANADA EXPEDITION.—A NARROW ESCAPE.—THE REVOLUTION.—ATTACK ON BEVERLY.—HUGH HILL.—FEMALE RIOTERS.—COMMERCE AND MANUFACTURIES.—PAST AND PRESENT POLICY.—TOWN HALLS.—FIRE DEPARTMENT, MILITIA, ETC.

BEVERLY lies to the north of Salem, from which it is separated by Beverly harbor. It is bounded on the south by Beverly and Salem harbors, on the north by Wenham, on the east by Manchester and Wenham Neck, and on the west by the Essex Branch river and Danvers. It is eighteen miles from Boston, on the Eastern Railroad. It has a hilly surface, and much rocky and unproductive land, although there is a great deal of valuable and fertile soil. From some of the hills in the town beautiful prospects may be obtained of the surrounding country. It was first settled by the removal of John and William Woodbury, with others of the companions of Roger Conant, from the south or Salem side to the north or "Cape Ann side" of the harbor. Conant and John Balch, with others, came soon after, about

the year 1630. Nearly one hundred adult male persons bearing the name of Woodbury, or Woodberry, are found in the "Beverly Directory" of 1877, and about a dozen in the "Salem Directory." It is at the present day, one of the principal family names in this town. The names of Conant and Balch are nearly extinct in both places. Many of the bearers of these ancient names are direct descendants of these first settlers, though not all.

Beverly is now connected with Salem by a great bridge which is 1484 feet long and 34 feet wide. The act for incorporating the proprietors of this bridge was passed in 1787. It is built on ninety-three wooden piers of oak timber, driven into the mud. It has a draw for vessels. The first pier of this bridge was driven in May, 1788. The proprietors were authorized to receive toll for seventy years from that date. The term expired in 1858, and the bridge is now a free bridge, and belongs to the Commonwealth. The main pipe of the Wenham water works, through which the city of Salem receives its water, extends along the western side of this bridge on independent piers. Further to the west is the great railroad bridge, over which the trains of the Eastern Railroad make frequent passages, holding speedy communication between Boston and the various points to the east. Previous to the advent of the railroad a fine line of stages was run from Beverly to Boston, and many are the amusing stories told of incidents connected therewith, and of the amusement furnished gratuitously to the passengers, by Woodbury Page and others of the jovial

drivers, who, when not cracking their whips, were cracking well-timed jokes.

One of the first houses in this town is supposed to have been at Woodbury's point, in that part of the town now known as the "Cove." It was a large double house, constructed for defence, and called the garrison house. A settlement by an Ellingwood (probably Ralph) was among the earliest, on what was formerly known as Ellingwood's point, directly opposite the Salem side, but better known to day as Webber's point. The land about here has been in the possession of the Ellingwoods, and their descendants, the Webbers, for nearly two hundred and fifty years.

In 1668 the settlement was incorporated as a distinct township by the name of Beverly, and in 1753, "Ryall side," a piece of territory lying between Danvers and Beverly, was annexed to Beverly.

The territory of the town is nearly seven miles in length, and three and a half in width at its greatest extent. It has three postal centres, viz., Beverly, North Beverly, and Beverly Farms. The most thickly settled portion lies next to Salem, and is supported largely by its boot and shoe manufactories, which employ a large number of the inhabitants, both male and female. North Beverly is devoted largely to farming interests, whilst Beverly Farms, or West Beach, as it is now commonly called, is given up almost entirely to summer residents, from Boston and elsewhere. They have erected here many princely mansions, and own most beautiful estates, which have made it one of the pleasantest

and most desirable sea-shore villages on the coast. West Beach commands a fine view of Massachusetts bay, with its many islands lying about the entrance of Beverly, Salem, Lynn and Boston harbors. It is favored with invigorating sea breezes, delightful drives, and beautiful inland scenery. All in all, there is not a more naturally attractive town in the Commonwealth, to the brief sojourner, than this ancient town, as there is not one unattractive locality in all its territory.

In 1671 Roger Conant, then an old man of 80 years, petitioned the General Court for an alteration of the name of the town, to that of Budleigh, the name of the place in England from whence he came. His petition was based on the ground that, being "but a small place it hath called on us the constant nick-name of *beggary*." But "the umble desire and request was not granted," the Court replying that the magistrates could see no cause to alter the name.

A formal deed of this town was given by the Indians, on the payment of £6, 6s., 8d. It is believed that previous to the whites settling here, Beverly was the location of quite an Indian village.

The first town-meeting was held November 23, 1668, when Capt. Thomas Lothrop, William Dixey, William Dodge, sen., John West and Paul Thorn-dike, were chosen selectmen. The first cotton-mill in America was established in Beverly, in the year 1788. It was built of brick, and located at North Beverly, near "Baker's corner," at the junction of the Birch-plain and Ipswich roads. A periodical of

the day, describing this factory, says:—"An experiment made with a complete set of machines for carding and spinning cotton, met with the warmest expectations of the proprietors." This establishment was visited by Gen. Washington, on his tour through the country in 1789.

The principal eminences in Beverly are Browne, Brimble, Cue, Snake, Prospect, Christian and Bald hills. Browne hill, in North Beverly, received its name from Hon. William Browne, a wealthy gentleman of Salem. He was the son of Samuel and Abigail Browne, and was born in 1709, and died in 1763. About 1750 he erected a splendid mansion on the summit of this hill, which he called "Browne Hall," but which was popularly termed "Browne's Folly." "This building consisted of two wings, two stories high, connected by a spacious hall, the whole presenting a front of seventy feet. The floor of the hall was painted in imitation of mosaic, and springing from the wall was a commodious circular gallery. Adjacent to the house was a building occupied solely by the domestics, all of whom were blacks. The dwelling was finished in the most thorough and costly manner, and was furnished in a style corresponding with the wealth of the owner. This hall was the scene of many magnificent entertainments, and on one occasion an ox was roasted whole and served up to a numerous dinner party." After Browne's decease, Capt. Richard Derby¹ became owner of the estate. It was subsequently purchased

¹ See page 116.

by William Burley, and the mansion disposed of in parts to several purchasers. A beautiful view is obtained from this hill, of the towns of Wenham, Hamilton, Topsfield, Danvers and Marblehead, the city of Salem, and the waters of Massachusetts Bay. A prospect of nearly equal beauty is afforded from Cherry hill, while the picturesque view from Webber's point, is unsurpassed by any water prospect in this vicinity.

The harbor of Beverly is very safe and commodious, and presented a lively appearance when the fishing business was the principal industry of the town. The streets of Beverly are of good width and generally ornamented with shade trees.

Some of the ancient streets are decidedly crooked, and there is a tradition that the street from Woodbury's point at the cove, to the head of Bass river, where a settlement was very early made, was laid out in the following manner:—A heifer was driven from the point to the latter place around the shore, which was the only way then travelled, and there left. The animal not liking her new abode, set out immediately to return through the woods. She arrived at the point before her driver, who was no doubt much surprised at seeing her, and would in all probability have pronounced her bewitched had the affair occurred some fifty years later. Her path was traced and it subsequently became a road of communication between the two places. This particular road has not been much improved since then.

The principal pond within the limits of Beverly is Beaver pond, situated about two hundred rods

south of Wenham line and about half a mile from Brimble hill. It is a beautiful pond, covering twenty-one acres. One hundred and seven acres of Wenham lake lies within the limits of Beverly. It measures in all three hundred and twenty acres, and is thirty-four feet higher than the flow of the tide at the head of Bass river. Its waters are pumped into a reservoir of the "Wenham water works," on "Chipman's" hill, which supplies both Salem and Beverly with an abundance of good water.

From the settlement of Beverly to 1649 its inhabitants worshipped with the First Church in Salem. They were then granted the privilege of conducting a place of worship of their own. The first meeting-house was erected in 1656 on the site of the present Old South meeting-house at the corner of Cabot and Hale streets, and near the old burying-ground, which then occupied the land just back of the present Baptist meeting-house, and extended from Hale street to the northern side of the Armory building. This burying-ground was contracted a few years ago, when Abbott street was cut through it, by removing the remains to the present enclosure on the north side of the new street. The first minister of the first church was the Rev. John Hale, who officiated until his death, a period of thirty-six years. The second church was incorporated by act of the General Court in 1713, at North Beverly. The other churches in town have been formed since the beginning of the present century in the following order: First Baptist, on Cabot street; Third Congregational, on Dane street; Second Baptist,

at the Farms; Fourth Congregational, at North Beverly (now extinct); Washington-street Congregational, on Washington street; Universalist, on Thorndike street; St. Peter's Episcopal, on Bow street; Methodist, on Railroad avenue, and the Catholic, on Cabot street.

Military defence was early found necessary in this town, both against savages and other foes. Beverly was always foremost in enterprises displaying patriotism or requiring courage. From the settlement of the town to the close of the Revolutionary war there was hardly an expedition against the Indians or French, or a battle of any moment against the British, in which the town was not represented. In the war of the Revolution, and of 1812, her privateers and men were very active on the ocean. In the Mexican war she was represented, and in the recent war of the Rebellion she gave freely of her blood and treasures, that the nation might live.

At an early period in the history of this town a family by the name of Foster was carried away by the Indians. They were taken to Canada, and it was seven years before they regained their freedom and returned.

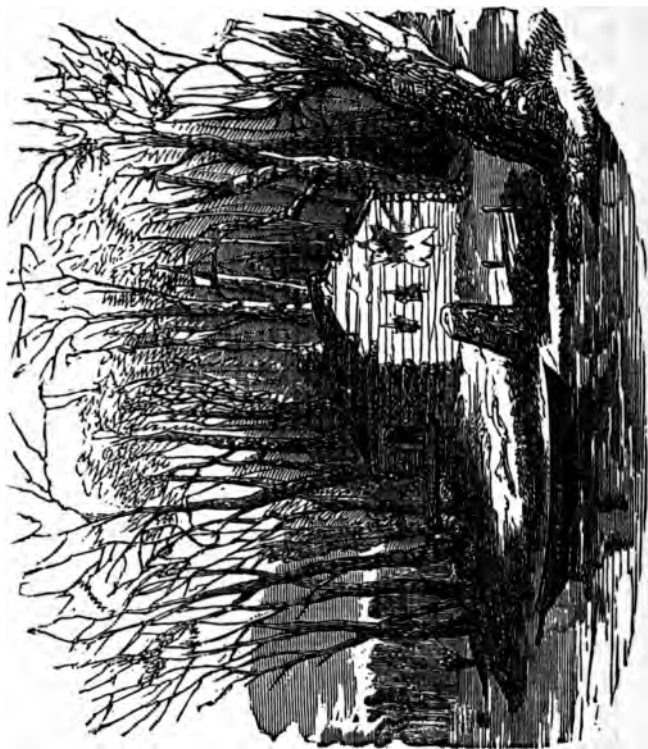
Beverly participated in the general consternation occasioned by "King Philip's war," and built forts and otherwise prepared for defence. One fort was built near the first meeting-house, probably on the hill in the rear of the Briscoe school-house. Another was built at Mackerel cove, and a third near what is now Dodge's grist mill. In this war, a company composed of the sons of some of the

best families in Essex county, and known as "the flower of Essex," was commanded by Capt. Thomas Lathrop of this town. While acting as convoy to wagon loads of wheat being brought from Deerfield to Hadley, they were surprised by the Indians at Muddy Brook, in South Deerfield and Capt. Lathrop and almost his entire company were slaughtered.

In 1690 Capt. William Rayment commanded a company from Beverly in the unsuccessful expedition under Sir William Phipps, against Canada. This expedition cost the single province of Massachusetts about \$50,000, together with many of her young men by a malignant fever. It was a sad blow to our province.

In one of the early French wars a merchantman from Beverly was captured and carried to the West India Islands. The captain was allowed to return to Beverly for money to ransom himself and crew, leaving one of his men, by the name of Hill, as hostage, under the threat that after a specified day, if the money was not received, all food should be withheld from the prisoner. The captain was delayed about eight or nine days beyond the specified time; the threat was put into execution, and Hill was nearly dead from starvation when the captain arrived. He slowly recovered, and lived many years to relate his experience, but always with tears in his eyes.

At the first outbreak of the Revolution, the town proceeded with moderation and yet firmness. Henry Herrick was chosen as delegate to the convention in Boston called for the purpose of consulting and



EARLY SETTLEMENT, AT HEAD OF BASS RIVER.

advising on the state of the province. He was charged by the people to abstain from any act of disrespect to Parliament, or disloyalty to the King, yet to maintain a firm but prudent opposition to all unconstitutional measures.

In the autumn of 1775 a Beverly privateer was chased into the harbor by a British man-of-war, *Nautilus*, of twenty guns. The privateer grounded on the flats. It being ebb-tide the *Nautilus* came to anchor outside the bar and opened fire on the town. The citizens of Beverly with their rifles, from behind a breastwork of rocks on Washington street beach, together with a battery from the Salem "Willows," returned the compliment so spitefully that the man-of-war was obliged to cut her cable and put to sea.

In this war Capt. Hugh Hill was among our noted privateersmen. While sailing with an English ensign at mast-head as a decoy, he was boarded by the captain of a British man-of-war. The latter, unsuspecting of the true character of Hill, remarked that he was "in search of that notorious Hugh Hill." Hill replied that he was on the lookout for the same individual. A few days later Hill was better prepared for an encounter and again falling in with the man-of-war, he ran up the American flag. An engagement ensued, and Hill, victorious, had the pleasure of introducing himself to his old visitor, as the man he had been looking for.

In 1777 there was a riotous proceeding in town, occasioned by the refusal of the merchants here to sell their West India commodities at the stated

prices, because of a recent depreciation in the currency. The ladies of Beverly were the principal rioters; about sixty of them, led by one lady who bore a musket, and attended by two ox-carts, marched down Cabot and Bartlett streets to the wharves, where a quantity of sugar was stored. Here they were opposed by the foreman of the warehouse. Nothing daunted, they seized him by the hair—which was false—and tore it from his head, and then, reinforced by men, demolished the gates with axes and loaded their carts with two hogsheds of sugar. This proceeding brought the merchants to terms and amicable negotiations were entered into.

Beverly in the early days carried on quite an extensive foreign trade, and many ships belonging to William Gray and other Salem merchants were unloaded here. From 1789 to about the commencement of the last war the cod-fishery was prosecuted here with great success and large pecuniary profit. It was prostrated for a time by the embargo, and again interrupted by the war of 1812. In 1787 Beverly employed in the various trades sixty-nine vessels, with 408 men. In 1843 there were seventy-eight vessels, with between four and five hundred men. About one-half of these were engaged in the fisheries. The manufactures of Beverly at this latter date amounted annually in value to only about \$120,000, on a capital of about \$40,000, which furnished employment to nearly 500 persons. Tanning and the manufacture of pottery were among the early industries in North Beverly. Beverly tanneries were long since discontinued, but a pottery

establishment is now carried on in the lower part of the town. The fishing business has given way to that of making shoes, and the locality of the depot, instead of the wharves, is the busy part of the town.

The natural advantages of Beverly for the prosecution of commerce and manufactures are not surpassed by any coast town in the Commonwealth. Thirty-four years ago, the Rev. Edwin M. Stone wrote, concerning the people of Beverly :

“ They have never been eager to engage in extravagant speculations, by which many make unsuccessful ‘haste to be rich,’ but have been contented with a safe and sure business, affording moderate and uniform profits. Hence they have experienced few of those embarrassments by which the prosperity of many places have been seriously affected, while they have built up for themselves a sound and honorable credit.”

Except as regards individual cases, the above could not be well said to-day. Since his writing, a public policy has been pursued which, though it may not have been wholly unwise as regards the future, yet, so far as it will be of profit to those now living, is to be deplored. Added to the extravagances which were universal throughout the country during the recent paper money period, Beverly continues a system of unequal taxation which bears heavily upon the bone and sinew portion of her inhabitants, blocking the wheels of progress and keeping prosperity, like a will-of-the-wisp, continually before their eyes and alike distant from their grasp. Aside from this unfortunate departure from their otherwise commendable spirit, the people of Beverly are char-

acterized for industry, prudence, sobriety and love of order.

The town hall, and Odd Fellows' hall, on Cabot street; Briscoe school-house, the powder house and the Common, on Essex street; and the cemetery, on Hale street, are among the other matters of interest in Beverly not previously mentioned.

In 1798 the old town hall was built by Obadiah Groce, of Salem, at a cost of \$2,000 to accommodate the Grammar school. It was furnished with a bell, and was used for all town purposes. It was removed a little to the north, on the edge of the Common, a few years ago, to make room for its successor, the present Briscoe school building. Previous to the building of the old hall, town-meetings were held in the First meeting-house. This hall was named Briscoe hall in honor of Robert Briscoe, who held the various offices of selectman, assessor, treasurer and representative from 1690 to 1726. In 1841 the present town hall was purchased of the heirs of Mr. Israel Thorndike, one of the most eminent and successful merchants in New England. This building was built as a private residence for Mr. Andrew Cabot, and occupied by him. It was afterwards occupied by Mr. Thorndike. When purchased by the town it was altered into a town hall, and was first opened for public use, October 26, 1841, with appropriate services and an address by the Hon. Robert Rantoul, lawyer and statesman, the pride of Beverly and an honor to the land which gave him birth. A year or two ago the town hall was increased to almost double its original propor-

tions, and a fine assembly room added above, known as "Thorndike hall."

Beverly has a fine fire department, consisting of five hose carriages, one steam fire engine and two hand engines; also a good military company, the Beverly Light Infantry, Company E, 8th Regiment Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. This company was organized about 1815. William Thorndike was the first commander. Charles L. Dodge is the present commander. Several companies were organized in Beverly previous to this one, and at one time there were three here, which, united with the Manchester companies, formed what was known as the "Beverly regiment."

There is also in the town a bank of discount, an insurance company, a public library, a lyceum and a farmer's club, a well graded system of public schools, embracing an excellent high school, a Post of the G. A. R., a Masonic and Odd Fellows' lodge, and a weekly journal—"The Beverly Citizen" (John B. Cressy, publisher). The number of enlistments for the late war was 988, and about a hundred of these lost their lives in the service of their country.

While there is much in the natural attractions in this town to delight the lovers of the beautiful, there is little to gratify the lovers of the marvellous. There are no gloomy caverns nor murderous-looking glens; no fortune teller, or veritable ghost associated with the history of Beverly; only the anecdote of the skipper who made signals of distress because short of beans, has yet appeared to give *ecart* to the annals of mystery or tradition.

MANCHESTER.

A PLEASANT DRIVE FROM SALEM.—LOCATION.—HISTORY.—POPULAR SUMMER RESORT.—WEST MANCHESTER AND ITS SUMMER VISITORS.—SINGING BEACH.—ELEGANT RESIDENCES.—MAGNOLIA, RAFF'S CHASM AND NORMAN'S WOE.

ANOTHER pleasant drive in the vicinity of the city, and one still within the limits of old Naumkeag, is to Manchester. Passing out over the long bridge and through Beverly, Pride's Crossing and Beverly Farms to Manchester, the roads all the way are hard and level, lined either with noble farm-houses or lovely sea-side cottages—genuine “mansions by the sea,”—which are surrounded by large and neatly kept lawns, and gardens fragrant with their thousands of bright flowers. The ocean rolls almost at our very feet, throughout the greater portion of the journey. Manchester is really the first of the “cape towns,” the others being Gloucester, Rockport and Essex. It lies eight miles north-east of Salem, and twenty-five miles from Boston on the Gloucester branch of the Eastern Railway. There are two stations, Manchester and West Manchester. The locality was once known as Jeffrys' Creek, so named in honor of William Jeffrys, its first settler. The principal stream of water in the town still bears his name.

Manchester was set off from Salem, on May 14, 1645, and derives its present name from the Duke

of Manchester. For many years it was an important fishing port but that industry has declined or been transferred to Gloucester. The principal pursuit at the present day is the manufacture of cabinet furniture, in which Manchester has no superior, and few equals. There are some thirteen establishments for this purpose, though, of late years, during the business depression, few of them have run at their full capacity, and several have been entirely closed. The total productions of these manufactories is about \$100,000 annually. There is also one tannery at the village, while in the surrounding country several productive farms are utilized for market-gardening purposes. The population of the town in 1875, was 1560 persons, divided among 418 families, dwelling in 335 houses. There are three churches, Congregational, Baptist and Catholic, eight schools, two hotels, together with numerous stores and minor business places. The entire town comprises only 4310 acres of land, and the total valuation is \$1,800,000. The average annual value of the products is \$223,000.

The popularity of the place at the present day arises mainly from its adaptability for a summer dwelling place, for many wealthy families of Boston, New York, etc. The "best families," and the ranks of the "distinguished men" of New England, are well represented here every season. Their cottages, surrounded by lawns, and gardens, and forests of shrubbery, interspersed with gravelled walks and drive-ways, are superb. None more beautiful can be found in New England. Most of them border on

the shore, though some are located on the opposite side of the "shore-road," in the midst of delightful oak groves, or on the high bluffs which overlook the town and the bay with its green islands. The drives around town are charming. The shore itself is an alternation of sandy beaches and rocky bluffs, affording prime facilities for bathing, boating and fishing.

Driving down through West Manchester we pass the cosy summer residence of Rev. C. A. Bartol, D.D., pastor of the West Church, Boston, and one of the most eminent divines in New England. This venerable minister is renowned for his hospitality, often entertaining entire church parties at his place.

Near by are also the handsome residences of B. G. Boardman, Dana Boardman, N. B. Mansfield, Walter Cabot, Messrs. Howe, Abbott, Stevens, and others.

A little farther on are the residences of Dr. O. S. Fowler, E. E. Rice, J. W. Merrill, at Gale's point; F. H. Morgan and Capt. A. W. Smith near by. In the locality known by the strange cognomen of "Belly-Ache cove," is the magnificent Hemenway estate.

About the only curiosity of the place is the "singing beach," a beach which at times, when pressed by the foot or struck by an incoming wave, sends forth a musical sound. When pressed by the foot, the note is shrill and clear; when struck by the sea it is soft and sweet. Such phenomenon is very rare; we read of its counterpart as existing only on the coast of Scotland, and one or two other places.

Hugh Miller, in his "Cruise of the Betsey; or, A Summer Ramble among the Hebrides," p. 75, describes a phenomenon similar to the beach in Manchester:

"I was turning aside this sand of the Oölite, so curiously reduced to its original state, and marking how nearly the recent shells that lay imbedded in it resembled the extinct ones that had lain in it so long before, when I became aware of a peculiar sound that it yielded to the tread, as my companions paced over it. I struck it obliquely with my foot, where the surface lay dry and incoherent in the sun, and the sound elicited was a shrill, sonorous note, somewhat resembling that produced by waxed thread, when tightened between the teeth and the hand and tipped by the nail of the forefinger. I walked over it, striking it obliquely at each step, and with every blow the shrill note was repeated. My companions joined me ; and we performed a concert, in which, if we could boast of but little variety in the tones produced, we might at least challenge all Europe for an instrument of the kind which produced them."

Driving from the village towards this beach, we pass the splendid summer homes of James T. Fields, Esq., the distinguished author, lecturer and publisher ; Hon. Richard H. Dana, jr., an eminent lawyer, poet and scholar ; of J. B. Booth, the tragedian, and one of the proprietors of the Boston Theatre ; Russell Sturgis, a successful merchant and ex-President of the Boston Young Men's Christian Association ; also L. N. Tappan, Mr. John Gilbert, Dr. J. A. Brown, Mrs. Bowers, Joseph Sawyer, Rev. A. J. Gordon, Rev. E. P. Tenney (novelist), Joseph Proctor, Mrs. Towne of Philadelphia, and many others equally attractive, but whose owners, perhaps, are not so well known. Beyond these, toward Gloucester, we pass the elegant cottage home of Isaac West of New Orleans ; also of Caleb Curtis, T. Jefferson

Coolidge and his father Joseph Coolidge. The visitor will find free access to the grounds around many of the residences, provided he conducts himself properly; and words fail to express the delightfulness of the drives within some of the enclosures. The shore as seen from Salem harbor is studded with trees, from out which, here and there, peep these summer residences, presenting to the beholder a quiet and retired spot for resort after a day of busy turmoil.

Three miles further on down the shore, is a section of the city of Gloucester known as Magnolia, also a popular resort for Boston people during the summer months as well as many camping parties, including, about the middle of every August, the Salem Cadets, one of the finest military organizations in the State. The place does not come properly under the head of Naumkeag, but few people would drive to Manchester without "taking in" Magnolia also. It is the most romantic locality on the whole Cape. Dense forests, covering an alternation of swamps and rocky hills, are interspersed with fields and pastures and dotted by cottages. In these swamps grow the celebrated flower, known as Magnolia. This may often be found grown to a height of ten feet, having a large white flower, of the sweetest and most delicious odor. Steamers from Boston and Salem touch here occasionally in summer. Several small but attractive hotels and a few private residences, mostly of recent construction constitute the "settlement" at present, but should it continue to grow during the next five years as it has during the past three, it will become a good-sized village.



WRECK OF THE HESPERUS.—(SEE PAGE 296.)

Here is the famous Rafe's chasm, a channel in the solid rocks of the shore nearly a hundred feet deep, into which every sea runs with terrible force, leaping far up the sides and falling back again, to be drawn outward with great rapidity. In a storm the noise from this chasm sounds like heavy artillery in an engagement. Here, too, is the famous reef of Norman's Woe, whereon the schooner Hesperus was wrecked many years ago. The event has been immortalized by Longfellow in his poem entitled, "Wreck of the Hesperus."

"And fast through the midnight dark and drear,
Through the whistling sleet and snow,
Like a sheeted ghost, the vessel swept
Tow'rds the reef of Norman's Woe.

Her rattling shrouds all sheathed in ice,
With the masts went by the board;
Like a vessel of glass, she stove and sank,
Ho! ho! the breakers roared.

Such was the wreck of the Hesperus,
In the midnight and the snow!
Christ save us all from a death like this,
On the reef of Norman's Woe."

The shore is one solid mass of rock, of a reddish hue, all the way to Gloucester, a distance of some three miles. The bluffs often rise to a height of a hundred feet, against which the sea dashes with terrific force at all times, while in a storm it thunders against the solid rocks with a deafening roar, sending the milk-white spray far above the highest, and creating a perfect sea of foam.

"These restless surges eat away the shores
Of earth's old continent; the fertile plain
Welters in shallows, headlands crumble down,
And the tide drifts the sea-sands in the streets
Of the drowned city."

WENHAM.

WHEN INCORPORATED.—THE CHURCHES AND THEIR ORGANIZATION.—HUGH PETERS AND REV. JOHN FISK.—POPULATION AND INDUSTRIES.—BEAUTIES OF NATURE.—ASBURY GROVE.—ESSEX BRANCH RAILROAD.—OPINION OF A NATIVE HISTORIAN.

THE town of Wenham, once a portion of Salem, was incorporated as an independent municipality and given its present name (from Wenham, Suffolk county, England), on May 10, 1643. Previous to that time, it had been known as "Enon" or "Salem village." It is the oldest of the several towns detached from the original territory of Naumkeag. The first preaching in the place was by Hugh Peters, about 1636. His text was: "At Enon, near Salim, because there was much water there." The First Church was formed on October 8, 1644, with Rev. John Fisk as pastor. Mr. Fisk was something of a local historian, and the journals and parish books kept by him, constitute the most valuable records which we now have of the early settlement at Naumkeag.

There are, at present, two churches in the town: a Congregational and a Baptist,—the latter at Wenham Neck. Farming forms the principal industry, 106 persons being engaged in the pursuit, and 71 in that of shoemaking. The town has a

population of 911, divided among 219 families, residing in 186 dwelling-houses. The census of 1875 places the valuation at \$526,350, and the annual value of the products at \$98,807.

It is a most delightful country town, and the surface is but rarely broken by hills and valleys. The fields and woods are interspersed with several lovely sheets of water. There is Wenham lake, the source of the water supply of Salem and Beverly. This is one of the most beautiful lakes in eastern Massachusetts. Its water is as pure as any known in the State, and the ice cut here in winter has no superior. Then there are Idlewood lake, Cedar pond, and Muddy pond in the northern part of the town, and Coy's pond in the southern part. Ipswich river touches the northern boundary, while Miles river, the outlet of Wenham lake, runs through the southern section.

Wenham has become quite a summer resort for residents of Salem and Boston, while on its borders, in the adjoining town of Hamilton, lies Asbury Grove, used by the Methodists as a camp-meeting ground. Hundreds of people live on the grounds during the entire summer, some coming as early as May and remaining until into October. There are several hundred pretty residences here, and about forty society tents. Among the residences are some of the finest in town, costing several thousands of dollars. A branch of the Eastern Railway runs from Wenham depot to the grove, and numerous trains are run over it during "Camp-meeting Week."

Idlewood, on the borders of Idlewood lake, is a

favorite pic-nic ground for parties from Salem and other neighboring towns.

Wenham is connected with Salem and Boston by the Eastern Railway, and also with the east; while a branch track runs to Essex, a ship-building town, five miles distant. This road was built by the town of Essex and opened in 1872, and purchased by the Eastern Railroad company in 1874, for \$95,000. It never has paid expenses.

The town is well described in Allen's "History of Wenham:"

"Nature has not given us, as a town, any remarkable advantages of situation. Our streams are too small to be of much use for manufacturing purposes. Our inland position debars us from the sea. We have no stores of mineral wealth to be dug from the bowels of the earth; but industry, energy and economy are admirable substitutes for these gifts of nature, and may more than compensate for her deficiencies. Without anything specially grand or romantic in the way of scenery, Wenham possesses many of the elements of a charming country residence. It has a fertile soil and a healthful position. The houses and farms present a general appearance of neatness and comfort. In every direction are good roads and pleasant drives; while our gracefully-rounded hills and crystal lakes present scenery of a beauty and loveliness rarely equalled."

TOPSFIELD AND MIDDLETON.

**TOPSFIELD.—SETTLEMENT AND CHURCHES.—ITS PART IN THE
WITCHCRAFT DELUSION.—ORIGINAL SETTLERS.—PROMINENT
MEN.—POPULATION.—VALUATION AND OTHER STATISTICS.—
MIDDLETON.—TOPOGRAPHY.—INDUSTRIES.—HISTORY.—
POPULATION, VALUATION AND PRODUCTS.**

THE town of Topsfield is the most northerly portion of the territory originally comprised in Naumkeag. It was settled by people from Salem and Ipswich, in 1639, and was incorporated as a separate town on October 18, 1650. The Indian name of the place was "Shenewemedy." When it belonged to Naumkeag, it was known as the "New Meadows." The name Topsfield is derived from a parish in England, bearing that name. The first church was organized in 1663, with Rev. Thomas Gilbert as pastor. It is still sustained, and, until the formation of the Methodist church, in 1830, was the only religious organization in town. It is now of the Congregational order.

Mary Estes and Sarah Wildes of this place, were executed as victims of the witchcraft delusion in 1692, and Abigail Hobbs was condemned to death on a like charge but was subsequently pardoned. In early times, bears and wolves infested the town, and it was threatened with Indian attacks, which led to the construction of a fort or garrison-house,

but history does not record that it was ever brought into requisition. Among the men recorded as original settlers or owners of Topsfield, we find Samuel Symonds, John Endicott, Simon Bradstreet, Zachæus Gould, Francis Peabody, William Towne, Thomas Perkins, John Wildes, Nathaniel Porter and Abraham Redington. Among the distinguished men who hailed from the town, were Nathaniel Peabody, a statesman, physician and soldier; Jacob Kimball, a music composer and the author of "Rural Harmony"; Daniel Breck, an able jurist and a member of Congress; Elisha Huntington, Lieutenant-governor of the State, and mayor of Lowell for eight years; and Elisha L. Cleveland, D.D., an eminent divine. Topsfield was also the birthplace of the father of Joseph Smith, the celebrated Mormon prophet.

The town has a population of 1221 persons, divided among 284 families, in 220 dwellings. There are 162 farmers, and 138 shoemakers, showing that the industry of the town is nearly equally divided between these pursuits. Its valuation by the census of 1875 was \$770,370, and the annual productions amounted to \$335,387. The surface of the town, like most other Essex county "back towns," is diversified with hills and valleys, streams and ponds. The geological formation is sienite and greenstone. Such rare plants as the "Painted-cup" (*Castillia*), and the "Turk's-cap" lily (*Lilium-Surperbum*), are found here.

MIDDLETON is an agricultural and shoe manufacturing town, lying to the west of Topsfield and next

north of Danvers. It is connected with Salem and Boston by the Lawrence branch Railroad. Like Topsfield, it is a diversity of hills and valleys, streams and ponds. That beautiful stream of water known as Ipswich river, borders it on the south and east. The principal sheet of water is Middleton pond, covering about 100 acres, from which Danvers draws its water supply. The leading industries are farming and the manufacture of shoes.

The history of the town is uneventful. It was first settled in the westerly part, by Bray Wilkins and John Gingell, his brother-in-law, in 1660. Thomas Fuller, a Woburn blacksmith, followed them three years later and settled on Pierce's brook, and about the same time William Nichols and William Hobbs settled on Nichols' brook.

A church was formed and a minister ordained, on November 26, 1729. The first pastor was Rev. Andrew Peters. There is only one church society in town (Congregational). The town was incorporated on June 20, 1728, and undoubtedly derives its name from its locality. The population of the town is 1092; families, 233; dwellings, 190. The valuation is \$491,246, according to the census of 1875, and the value of the products for the year 1874 was \$367,164. There are 102 farmers and 105 shoemakers, besides men of various other trades and professions.

THE END.

INDEX.

SALEM.

- Abbott, Stephen, 148.
 Academy of Science, 160, 167.
 Adams, J. Q., 75.
 Africa, 40.
 Alexis, Duke, 75.
 Allen, Abigail, 130.
 Allen, William, 4.
 Almshouse, 220.
 Almy, J. F., 202.
 Amazon, 230.
 Amer. Asso. Adv. Science, 132.
 Andrews, Joseph, 63.
 Anderson, Rev. T. D., 85.
 Annals of Salem, Felt's, 66, 77.
 Appleton, John, 68.
 Arabella, Lady, 216, 217.
 Arabella street, 217.
 Arrington building, 86.
 Asiatic building, 89, 41.
 Assembly building, 105.
 Athenæum, Salem, 70, 100.
 Athenæum Library, 63.
 Atlantic Car Works, 205, 206.
 Atwood, Rev. E. S., 105.

 Babcock, Rev. Rufus, 85.
 Bacon, Jacob, 104.
 Baker's Island, 110, 216, 229.
 Baich, John, 4.
 Ballot, origin of, 12.
 Ballou, Hosea, 172.
 Banks, 131.
 Baptists, persecuted, 43.
 Baptist ministers, 63, 85.
 Barnard, T., 42, 62, 65, 176.
 Barnard, Thos. 2d., 86, 102.
 Bartholomew, Henry, 163.
 Barton Square Church, 63, 89.
 Bass River, 80.
 Batchelor, George, 89.
 Bath street, 151.
 Bendle's Tavern, 208, 214.
 Bentley, William, 100, 189.
 Bertram, John, 136, 211.
 Beverly, 21, 65, 201, 203, 216, 217.
 Beverly Bridge, 61.
 Bi-hop, Bridget, 69, 74, 103.
 "Blubber Hollow," 237.

 Blue Anchor Tavern, 221.
 Bolles, E. C., 85, 172.
 Boston Street, 81, 190, 200.
 Bot's Court, 104.
 Bowditch, N., 155, 160.
 Bowditch, N. I., 150.
 Bowker Block, 160.
 Boyden, Albert G., 109.
 Bradstreet, Simon, 165-6.
 Brick house, the first, 91.
 Bridge Street, 214, 217.
 Briggs, Geo. W., 42.
 Briggs, Enos, 226.
 Brigham, L. F., 84.
 Broad Street, 105.
 Broad Street Cemetery, 110.
 Brookhouse, R., 40, 45, 201, 211.
 Browne, Benjamin, 121.
 Brown, B. F., 67, 161.
 Browne, John and Samuel, 2, 16, 17.
 Brown, Nathaniel, 53.
 Brown, Samuel, 114.
 Brown, W., 69, 120, 132, 147, 166.
 Browne, William, Jr., 125, 130.
 Brown, William Burnett, 115.
 Buffinton, Z., 73, 148.
 Buffum's Corner, 200, 219.
 Buffum's Hill, 164.
 Bulletin, Newspaper, 127.
 Bunker Hill, 147.
 Burdett, George, 77, 78.
 Burleigh, Mrs., 103.
 Burton, John, 197.
 Burroughs, George, 103.
 Burying Point Lane, 23.
 Butler, Benjamin F., 84.
 "Button Hole," 237.

 Cabot, A. and J., 65, 233.
 Cabot, Joseph S., 53, 100.
 Cadets, Salem, 67, 146, 148.
 Calcutta, 116.
 Calley, Samuel, 53.
 Calvary Baptist Church, 145.
 Car Shops, E. R. R., 218.
 Cape Ann, 3, 4, 10, 24, 72.
 Capital removed fr. Salem, 13.

- Carlton, Oliver, 109.
 Carlton, William, 125.
 Castle Hill, 26, 28, 36.
 "Cat and Wheel," 214.
 Catholics, 136-139, 140, 145.
 Catholic Cemetery, 187.
 Cat Island, 229.
 Central Baptist Ch., 145, 170.
 Chapman, John, 125.
 Charter Street, 132, 140.
 Charter Street Cemetery, 133.
 Chase, Moses P., 110.
 Cheever, James, 233.
 Chestnut street, 105, 111.
 Cheverus, Bishop, 137.
 Choate, George, 63.
 Choate, Geo. F., 83.
 Choate, Rufus, 60, 84, 86.
 Church attendance compulsory, 45.
 City Hall, 37, 38, 45, 52, 55, 57, 74.
 Clay, Henry, 75.
 Cleopatra's Barge, 135.
 Clerk of Courts, 83.
 Clerk of Salem Village, 104.
 Clifford, John, 221.
 Club, Social Evening, 62.
 Coal business, 218, 219.
 Coates, Benjamin, 73.
 Cogswell, William, 53.
 Colman, Henry, 89.
 Coll. Essex Inst. Hist., 66.
 Collectors of Salem, 40, 103.
 Collins Cove, 23.
 Common, Salem, 121.
 Condy, Jeremiah, 63.
 Congregational Club, 79.
 Congress, 47, 70, 174.
 Contract with Higginson, 10.
 Conant, Roger, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 10,
 24, 25, 35, 72, 74, 88, 119, 217.
 Commerce of Salem, 55, 135.
 Common, Salem, 150.
 Commanders, Naval, 236.
 Concert Hall, 131.
 Conrad's Pavilion, 127.
 Conway, Rev. J., 139, 187.
 Cotton Factory, 205.
 County Commissioners, 83.
 County Treasurer, 83.
 County Street, 171.
 Corey, Giles, 97, 193.
 Corey, Martha, 132.
 Corwin, Jonathan, 119.
 Corwin, G., 42, 92, 110, 119, 231.
 Cornelius Elias, 79.
 Council, General, 5, 8, 68.
 County Street, 81.
 Courts. See Individual names.
 Court House, 39, 46, 48, 50, 51,
 73, 77, 83.
 Court Street, 49.
 Cousins' Bee Hive, 122.
 Covenant of First Ch., 12-16.
 Creek Street, 31, 34.
 Cross, Henry J., 54, 132.
 Crombie Street Church, 91.
 Crosby, Alpheus, 103.
 Crouch, Mary, 125.
 Crowninshield, C., 136.
 Crowninshield, G., 210, 211.
 Curwen House, 92.
 Cushing, T. C., 124.
 Custom House, 34, 56, 60, 103,
 131, 145, 210.
 Cutler, Mannasch, 65.
 Dabney, John, 124.
 Dalton, Samuel, 148.
 Daland House, 207.
 Dana, R. H., Jr., 84.
 Danvers, Town, 21, 77, 96, 165.
 Darby Fort, 223.
 Davenport, Capt., 92.
 Debt of Salem, 55.
 Deeds, 182.
 Dennis, W. D., 127.
 Derby Academy, 117.
 Derby, Elias Haskett, 67, 114,
 152, 225, 232.
 Derby, Elias Haskett, Jr., 117.
 Derby, Elias Haskett, 3d, 117.
 Derby, Mrs. E. H., 117.
 Derby, Ezekiel H., 117, 202.
 Derby, John, 117.
 Derby, R., 116, 122, 132, 209, 227.
 Derby, Richard, 2d, 114, 117.
 Derby Square, 114, 117.
 Derby Wharf, 209.
 Derby Street, 81, 209.
 Devereux, Gen., 189.
 Dissenters, 1, 16.
 Distinguished men, 237.
 Distillery, 41.
 Dixey, William, 215.
 "Dolphin," 234.
 Dudley, Thomas, 160.
 Dwyer, John, 146.
 Eastern R. R., 24, 28, 29, 34, 37.
 East Church, 153.
 East India Marine building,
 131, 158, 166.
 Eaton, William, 75.
 Edwards, Richard, 108.
 Elder, Hugh, 91.
 Ellis, Francis, 119.
 Elm Street, 25, 140, 143.
 Emerson, Brown, 72, 105, 188.
 Endicott farm, 77.
 Endicott's house, 77.
 Endicott, John, 6, 7, 8, 9, 20, 72,
 74, 88, 147, 216, 217, 220.
 Endicott, William C., 84.

- English Church, 1, 2, 3, 16, 17.
 English, Philip, 168, 212, 213.
 Episcopal Church, 62.
 Eppes Lane, 72.
 Eppes, Daniel, 72.
 Essex Coffee House, 120, 123.
 Essex Historical Society, 70.
 Essex House, 120, 122, 127.
 Essex, town of, 86.
 Essex, Frigate, 141, 225.
 Essex R. R., 218.
 Essex Street, 37, 39, 46, 51, 58,
 61, 88, 89, 91, 92, 103, 117.
 Express business, 40.

 Fabens Wharf, 134.
 Federal Street, 171, 201.
 Felt, J. B., 46, 66, 77, 132, 152.
 Felt, John, 176.
 Ferry to Beverly, 214.
 Ferry to Marblehead, 212.
 Fielding, F. A., 126.
 Filmore, J., 88, 203.
 Fire Engine, the first, 41.
 First Church, 5, 12, 31, 32, 41, 48,
 57, 73, 78, 104, 153, 161.
 First Baptist Church, 84, 170.
 Fields, Governor, 31.
 Fire in Salem, 48, 79, 89.
 Fire Department, 41, 173.
 Fireside Favorite, 127.
 Fisher, Joshua, 65.
 Fishing, 231.
 Fish Street, 134, 221.
 Fiske, John, 109.
 Fiske, Samuel, 42, 78.
 First house, 119.
 Flint's Building, 36, 39.
 Floating Bridge, 195.
 Foote, Caleb, 125, 195.
 Fort, the first, 88.
 Forest River, 219.
 Forts Lee and Juniper, 224.
 Fort Pickering, 225.
 Fort Williams, 224.
 Forrester, Simon, 132, 137.
 Forrester, John, 141.
 Forest River, 34.
 Foster, John, 174.
 Foster, W. H., 187.
 Franklin Building, 144, 151.
 Front Street, 36, 81, 113.
 Frost, A. F., 104.
 Frye's Mills, 141.

 Gage, Gen., 47, 106.
 Gallows Hill, 192.
 Gardner, Thomas, 4.
 Gas Light Company, 218.
 Gasclde, Salem, 124.
 Gedney, John, 119.
 Gedney, Sheriff, 157.
 Gedney Court, 34.
 General Court, 8, 47, 66, 198.
 "George," Ship, 141.
 Gill, Joshua, 88.
 Gill, Molly, 130.
 Gloucester, 4, 229.
 Goffe, Thomas, 6.
 Gott, Charles, 58.
 Goode, Sarah, 97, 193.
 Goodhue, William, 121.
 Goodell, A. C., 171, 201.
 Goodhue Street, 140, 141.
 Government 5, 6, 74.
 Grammar Schools, 77, 109.
 Grant, U. S., 75.
 Gray, Thomas, 4.
 Gray, William, 112, 121, 122, 124.
 Grand Army, 186.
 Grand Turk, 135, 141, 232.
 Gray, J. J., 139.
 Gray, Samuel, 130.
 Great Pasture, 195.
 Great Tavern, 61, 62, 65.
 "Gutter-lane," 238.

 Hagar, Daniel B., 108.
 Hair to be worn short, 43.
 Hale's Building, 127, 130.
 Halley, William, 139.
 Hambleton, W. J., 88.
 Hamilton, Alexander, 75.
 Hamilton, town of, 65.
 Hamilton Hall, 105.
 Hammond, Daniel, 40.
 Hancock, John, 47.
 "Hannah," Privateer, 135.
 Harvard College, 61.
 Harbor, Salem, 140, 202.
 Harmony Grove, 165, 187.
 Haskell, A. M., 89.
 Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 48, 67,
 134, 143.
 Haymarket, 132.
 Hayward, T. B., 103.
 Hensfield House, 40.
 Herbert Street, 144.
 Hewes, J. T., 42.
 Higginson, Colonel, 227.
 Higginson, Francis, 9, 12, 13, 19,
 41, 42, 74, 217, 227.
 Higginson, John, 42, 151, 181,
 197, 198.
 Higginson, N., 151.
 Highland Avenue, 195.
 High School, 109.
 High Street, 34.
 Highways, the first, 81.
 Hiller, Joseph, 103, 131, 148.
 Hiller, O. P., 103.
 Hill, Lydia, 130.
 Historic Circle, 73.

- Historical Society, Essex, 70.
 Holyoke, E. A., 62, 65, 157.
 Hollingsworth, R., 220.
 Holyoke Building, 39.
 Horton, N. A., 125.
 Hospital, Salem, 136.
 House of Seven Gables, 67, 212.
 Howard, John, 212.
 Howard St. Cemetery, 171.
 Humphrey, David, 75.
 Hubon Block, 70.
 Huntington, Asahel, 53, 159.

 Immaculate Concept. Ch., 176.
 Importation of goods, vote against, 121.
 Indians 5, 20, 25, 39, 58, 80, 81, 147, 179, 184, 223, 234.
 Infantry, Salem Mechanic, 36.
 Informers, 153.
 Ingersoll, Richard, 212.
 Ingersoll, Susan, 213.
 Inst., Essex, 26, 157, 160, 161.
 Islands Salem Harbor, 229, 230.
 Israel, Fielder, 42.
 Ives, S. B. Jr., 84.

 Jackson, Andrew, 75, 120.
 Jacobs, George, 193.
 Jail Delivery, 160.
 Jail, 168, 170, 171.
 Jeffry, Mrs. Ruth, 65.
 Jeffry, William, 4.
 Jilly, W. H., 218.
 Jerusalem Church, 103.
 Jocelyn, Edward, 110.
 "Johany Cake," 237.
 Johnson, A. H., 160.
 Juniper, 224, 227, 228.
 Jute Factory, 218.
 Jutting upper story, 170.

 Kernwood, 186.
 Kimball Court, 155.
 King Street, 89.
 Knapp, 157.
 "Knocker's Hole," 237.

 Lafayette, Gen., 43, 75, 122, 203.
 Lafayette House, 117.
 Lafayette M. E. Church, 88.
 Lafayette Street, 28, 34, 36, 212.
 Lander, F. W., 148.
 Landing place of Conant, 4, 24.
 Lead Mills, Forest R., 205, 206.
 Lead Mills, Salem, 206, 218.
 Lectures, first, 165.
 Lee, Henry, 224.
 Lee, W. R., 131.
 Legislature of Mass., 46.
 Leslie, Col., 86, 102, 116, 161, 174, 175, 184.

 Letters from Company to Higginson, 10-11.
 Liberty Hill, 186, 219.
 Liberty Street, 28, 132.
 Liberty Tree, 153.
 Library, Social, 61, 63, 65.
 Library of Athenæum, 65.
 Library of Richard Kirwan, 65.
 Light Infantry, 146, 148.
 Liturgy used by Brownes, 16.
 Long Wharf, 232.
 Looby, Thomas, 207.
 Lord, Otis P., 84, 85.
 Loring, George B., 72, 102, 103.
 Lots laid out, 89.
 Low, Daniel, 42.
 Lowell Island, 229.
 Lyceum Hall, 70, 103.
 Lyford, John, 3, 4, 5.
 Lynde, Benjamin, 62, 86, 132.
 Lynde Street, 86.

 Main Street, 51.
 Manchester, 20.
 Mann, Ebenezer, 140.
 Manning Manston, 144.
 Manning, R. C., 43, 144.
 Mansfield William, 56.
 Mansion House, 101, 120.
 Marblehead, 20, 34, 140, 175, 202, 206, 223.
 Marblehead Neck, 229.
 Margin Street, 81.
 Marine Railway, 205, 206.
 Marine Society, Salem, 146.
 Market-house, 131.
 Market Square, 90.
 Marlboro, 81.
 Marsh, Planters' 215.
 Marston Building, 40.
 Mason, David, 121, 174.
 Mason, John, 111.
 Mason Street, 183.
 Mather, Cotton, 69, 81, 90, 153, 198.
 Maule, Thomas, 197.
 Mayors of Salem, 53.
 McIntire, Samuel, 113.
 McGilchrist, William, 62.
 Mechanic Hall, 64, 89, 140.
 Mechanic Infantry, 148.
 Medical Society, 160.
 Meek, Henry M., 56.
 Meredith, W. H., 88.
 Merritt, David, 40.
 Merritt, Henry, 189.
 Merrill, George E., 85.
 Messervy, W. S., 63.
 Methodist Episcopal Ch., 203.
 Methuen, 70.
 Methodists, 88, 203.
 Middleton, 21.

Military, 146, 150, 152, 155, 226.
 Mill Company, Prices, 53.
 Mills, R. C., 55.
 Mill Pond, 28, 66.
 Mill Street, 31, 34, 81.
 Minerva, the Ship, 136.
 Misery Island, 110.
 Monroe, James, 75, 118, 211.

Nantasket, Settlement at, 3.
 Natural Hist. Society, 157, 160.
 Naugus Head, 212, 223, 224.
 Naumkeag Mills, 205.
 Naumkeag River, 3, 80.
 Naumkeag Settlement, 3, 4, 5,
 10, 41, 72, 88, 217.
 Navy of Salem (1776), 233.
 Navy of Salem (1812), 235.
 Neck, Salem, 216, 220, 227.
 Negro Colony, 200.
 Neptune Street, 152.
 Nevins, W. S., 127.
 Newbury Street, 156.
 Newhall Tavern, 78.
 New Jerusalem Church, 103.
 Newspapers, 124-128.
 Nicholas, A., 157.
 Noble, John, 130.
 Nonantum Hall, 108.
 Normal School, 87, 108.
 Norman, Richard, 4.
 Norman Street, 34, 113.
 North Bridge, 106, 174-177.
 North Church, 54, 71, 85, 102.
 North Fields, 176, 177, 184.
 North River, 23, 39, 80, 89,
 140, 190.
 North Salem, 36, 184.
 North Street, 81, 174.
 Northend, W. D., 84, 86.
 Northey Street, 217.
 Northey, William, 51.
 Noyes, Nicholas, 67.
 Nurse, Rebecca, 97, 193.
 Nutting, John, 86.

Observer, Newspaper, 126.
 Odell, C. H., 211.
 Oil Manf. Co., 205, 206.
 Old Ladies' Home, 211.
 Old Men's Home, 211.
 Old Paved Street, 88.
 Old Planters, 215.
 Oliver, Andrew, 62, 120, 166.
 Oliver, Bridget, 69.
 Oliver, Henry K., 53, 109.
 Oliver Mansion, 69, 70.
 Oliver, Thomas, 69.
 Organization of City, 52.
 Orne, John, 50.
 Orne, Josiah, 52.
 Orne's Point, 186.

Orne St. Cemetery, 186.
 Osborne, Sarah, 97.
 Osgood, J. B. F., 36, 53.

Page, John, 148.
 Palfray, C. W., 126.
 Palfray, Peter, 4, 35, 74, 120, 126.
 Palfray, Warwick, 125, 132.
 "Paradise," 233.
 Parker, Alice, 193.
 Parkman, Deliverance, 132.
 Parris, Samuel, 96.
 Parties in politics, 124.
 Payne, Margaret, 171.
 Peabody, Francis, 102, 159, 161,
 186, 190.
 Peabody, George, 167, 189.
 Peabody, Town of, 21, 77, 81,
 155, 187.
 Peabody, John P., 42, 127.
 Peabody, Joseph, 136, 141, 161.
 Pease, George W., 126.
 Peck's building, 67.
 Pedrick, John, 175.
 Peele, J., 224, 234.
 Pennsylvania Pier, 218, 219.
 Perkins, J. W., 109.
 Pest-house, 221.
 Peters, H., 26, 43, 57, 78, 78, 231.
 Phillips, S. C., 52, 53, 72, 190, 218.
 Phillips Wharf, 218.
 Phillips, W. F., 219.
 Pickering House, 82, 105.
 Pickney, Charles C., 75.
 Pickering, John, 31, 33, 105.
 Pickering, Jonathan, 33.
 Pickering, Timothy, 53, 106.
 Pickman, Benj., 65, 67, 131, 167.
 Pickman, D. L., 180.
 Pickman House, 167.
 Pickwick, Samuel, 167.
 Pierce, Benj., 147.
 Pierson, G. H., 131.
 Pillories, 152.
 Pingree, David, 53.
 Pins, witch, 85.
 Pirates, 135, 223, 231.
 Pitman, Corporal, 29.
 Planter's Marsh, 215.
 Planters, the old, 215.
 Planter's Plea, 8, 81.
 Planters Street, 217.
 Pleasant Street, 214.
 Plummer, Caroline, 160, 226.
 Plummer Farm School, 226.
 Plummer Hall, 41, 42, 152,
 157, 161.
 Plymouth Colony, 2, 2, 57.
 Poems, the first, 169.
 Polk, James K., 75.
 Population, 238.
 Porter, Samuel, 175.

- Port House, 34, 25.
 Post-office, 37, 130.
 Post, Newspaper, 126.
 Postage, 130.
 Potters Field, 217.
 Pratt, John, 61, 65.
 Prescott, W. H., 161.
 Price, Walter, 33, 61.
 Prince, John, 42, 66.
 Prison, 45.
 Privateers, 135, 231, 236.
 Probate Court, 83.
 Proctor, John, 193.
 Pudeator, Ann, 156, 193.
 Pump, Hawthorne, 48, 74.
 Puritans, 1, 43, 74.
 Putman, Ann, 157.
 Putnam, F. W., 133.
 Putnam, Israel, 104.
 Putnam, Thomas, 104.
 Pynchon William, 6.

 Quakers, 16, 43, 61, 140, 195.
 Quarterly Courts, 43.

 Rebellion, War of, 148.
 Reed, Nathan, 160.
 Regatta, first, 35.
 Revolution, War of, 48, 231, 233.
 "Revenge," Ship, 233.
 Roberts, David, 53.
 Robinson, Samuel, 121.
 Rodgers, N. L., 40.
 Roger Williams House, 92, 119.
 Ropes, Nathaniel, 62.
 Roache's Point, 220.
 Rope-making, 217.
 Ropes, C. A., 136.
 Roswell, Henry, 6.
 Row, Thomas, 153.
 Ruck's Creek, 31, 111.
 Rumford, Count, 65.
 Russell, G. P., 207.
 Rust Street, 171.

 Salem and Lowell R. R., 219.
 Salem, meaning Peace, 3.
 Salem Coffee House, 122.
 Salem Lyceum, 70, 72.
 Saltoustaill, Leverett, 52.
 Sargent, H. B., 130.
 School houses, 151.
 School-house Lane, 28, 43.
 School, first free, 75.
 Scolding women, 45.
 Seamen's O. and C. F. Soc., 201.
 Settlement, locality of the first,
 5, 26, 27, 39, 73.
 Sharpe, Elder Samuel, 67, 74.
 Sharpe, Henry, 119.
 Sherman, E. J., 84.
 Ship-building, 33, 140.

 Ship Tavern, 61, 73, 119, 120.
 Sickness at Salem, 19.
 Silabee, Nathaniel Jr., 53.
 Silabee, B. F., 151.
 Skelton, Samuel, 9, 11, 12, 13, 31,
 42, 57, 113.
 Slaves, 140.
 Small, A. D., 110.
 Smith, M. H., 172.
 Social Library, 61, 63, 65, 67, 131.
 Societies, 198, 200.
 Somerville's public house, 72.
 South River, 5, 24, 25, 26, 28, 34,
 35, 39, 81, 89, 201.
 South Salem, 24, 26, 201, 217, 235.
 South Church, 76, 104.
 Southwicks, Quakers, 196.
 South Bridge, 117, 202.
 Sparhawk, John, 42.
 Sprague, Joseph, 148.
 Stacey, John, 119.
 Stage coaches, 29.
 State House, 40, 47.
 Stamp act denounced, 46.
 Statistics of Salem, 55, 236.
 Steamboats, 160.
 Stearns' Building, 57, 66.
 Stearns, William, 55.
 Stetson, Prince, 122.
 Stocks, 152.
 Stone, Thomas Y., 42.
 Story, Joseph, 84.
 St. James' Church, 139, 200.
 St. Mary's Church, 137, 139.
 St. Peter's Church, 129, 169.
 Streeter, G. L., 126, 227.
 Street Railway, 36, 171, 201.
 Story, Joseph, 205.
 Summer Street, 34.
 Sun Tavern, 121.
 Swamp, 151.
 Sweet's Cove, 31.

 Tabernacle Ch., 49, 52, 78, 105.
 Tanneries, 81, 191.
 Tanneries, 81, 191, 237.
 Temperance, 11.
 Thayer, John, 136.
 Thatcher, 97.
 Theatre, Salem, 91.
 Third church, 78.
 Thomas, B. F., 84.
 Thompson, C. P., 84.
 Thompson, J. W., 89.
 Throgmorton Cove, 234.
 Tituba, 97.
 Tobacco growing, 7, 11.
 Topography, 23.
 Topsfield, 21.
 Tower of London, 59.
 Town Meeting, first, 11.
 Town landing, 28.

- Town Hall, 51, 86, 90, 113.
 Town Houses, 45-8, 78, 77.
 Trail, H. S., 126.
 Training Field, 151.
 Trask, William, 4.
 Tunnel, E. R. R., 37, 89, 48.
 Turner, Christopher, 140.
 Turner, John, 120.
 Turner Street, 28, 211.
 Turnpike, 105.
 Tylly, John, 4.
 Union Bridge, 207.
 Union Street, 145.
 Upham, C. W., 13, 35, 42, 53, 63, 70, 74.
 Upham, W. P., 25, 26, 34, 40.
 Valuation of Salem, 55.
 Veren, Hillard, 40, 45, 74, 132.
 Veren, P., 35.
 Victims of witchcraft, 98.
 Vine Street, 136.
 Waldo, Jonathan, 66.
 Wales, Prince of, 75.
 Walton, E. N., 126.
 Wapping, 237.
 Ward, Charles, 85.
 Ward, Joshua, 42, 48.
 Washington, George, 42, 48, 75.
 Washington Street, 28, 37, 83, 42, 43, 48, 49, 52, 66, 69, 73, 77.
 Washington Square, 152.
 Watch-house, 66.
 Watchman, 66, 212.
 Watch-house Point, 220, 231.
 Waters, J. G., 86.
 Water Street, 134.
 Wayland, John, 85.
 Webb, Jonathan, 73, 131.
 Webb, S. P., 53.
 Webb, Benj., 121.
 Webber, C. H., 126.
 Webber, Putnam, 127.
 Webster, Daniel, 84, 86, 117.
 Wenham, 21.
 Wesley Chapel, 88, 208.
 West, Benjamin, 147.
 West, Nathaniel, 120.
 Wetmore, William, 160.
 Wharves, first, 28.
 Wheatland, Stephen G., 53.
 Wheatland, H., 132, 150, 160.
 Whipping-posts, 152.
 Whipple, George M., 159.
 White, John, 4, 6, 8, 81.
 White, Daniel A., 70, 159, 188.
 White, Joseph, 157, 233.
 Whitaker, Dr., 232.
 Willard, Joseph, 65.
 Williams, Abigail, 66.
 Williams, Henry L., 45, 53, 55, 102, 227.
 Williams, Roger, 41, 42, 57, 61, 68, 73, 78, 92.
 Willson, E. B., 102.
 Willard, John, 193.
 "Willows," 221, 227.
 Winthrop, J., 6, 7, 18, 19, 216-17.
 Winter Island, 221, 227.
 Winter Street, 214.
 Witch house, 91.
 Witchcraft, 20, 46, 53, 70, 73, 96, 171, 192, 214.
 Witch papers, 83.
 Witch-pins, 83.
 Woodbury, Humphrey, 4.
 Woodbury, John, 4, 6, 74, 119.
 Woodbury, William, 236.
 Wood, Robert, 153.
 Worcester, Samuel M., 79.
 Wright, George, 212.

DANVERS AND PEABODY.

- Asylum, State Lunatic, 242-45.
 Bakery, first in Colony, 253.
 Bagley, Rev. James, 246.
 Bell Tavern, 257.
 Burroughs, Geo., 246, 249.
 Buxton's hill, 252.
 Carpet factories, 251.
 Churches, 241, 253.
 Collins House, 251.
 Corey, Giles, 249.
 Crane River, 240.
 Danversport, 233, 241.
 Endicott, Charles, 252.
 Endicott, John, 240.
 Eppes, Daniel, 247.
 Fire Department, 253.
 First Church, Danvers, 249.
 First Church of Salem, 241.
 First Settlers, 240.
 Foster, Gideon, 247, 57.
 Gage, Gen., 251.
 Goode, Sarah, 249.
 Hawthorne Hill, 243.
 Historical, Danvers, 246-47.
 Historical, Peabody, 250.

Hooper, Robert, 251.
 Holton, Samuel, 247.
 Humphrey's Pond, 241.
 Humphrey, John, 241.
 Incorporation of Danvers, and
 South Danvers, 246.
 King, Daniel P., 247.
 Lexington, March to, 257.
 Middleton Pond, 242.
 Monument in Danvers, 242.
 Monument in Peabody, 256.
 Names, early, 247.
 Newspapers, 242, 53.
 Nurse, Rebecca, 249.
 Old Planters, 241.
 Osborn, Sir Danvers, 245.
 Parris, Rev. Samuel, 249, 51.
 Peabody, Francis, 251.
 Peabody, George, 242, 54-6, 58.
 Peabody Inst., Danvers, 243.
 Peabody Inst., Peabody, 258.
 Pear Tree Endicott, 240.
 Plains, 241.
 Pleasant Hill, 252.
 Population of Danvers, 245.
 Population of Peabody, 259.
 Porter, Moses, 247.
 Porter's River, 241.

Pottaries, 252.
 Proctor, John, 249.
 Putnam, Israel, 247, 248.
 Railroads, 242, 249, 253.
 Reed, Nathan, 247.
 Richardson, Mrs., 252.
 Riding Park, 241.
 Reservoir, 242.
 Rock Ship, 261.
 Rodgers estate, 252.
 Salem Village, 246.
 Settlers, the first, 240.
 Shillaber Homestead, 253.
 Skelton, Rev. Samuel, 241.
 Spite Bridge, 241.
 Statistical, Danvers, 245.
 Statistical, Peabody, 259.
 Sutton, Eben Dale, 258.
 Sutton Library, 258.
 Tanneries, 259.
 Tapleyville, 251.
 Tituba, 251.
 Town Meeting, First, 246.
 Upham, C. W., 247.
 Victoria, Queen, 258.
 Wharton, Eliza, 257, 61.
 Water's River, 240.
 Willard, 249.
 Witchcraft, 249.

MARBLEHEAD.

Abbot Benjamin, 265.
 Abbot Hall, 265, 274,
 Barnard, Thomas, 272.
 Cemetery, 272.
 Cowell, 267.
 Clifton House, 271.
 Churches, 265.
 Farming, 264.
 Fire of 1877, 274.
 Fisheries, 263, 264.
 Gale of 1846, 272.
 Gallison, John, 267.
 Getchell, John, 267.
 Gerry, Elbridge, 267, 272.
 Glover, General, 267.
 Gregory, J. J. H., 264, 271.

Harbor, 263.
 Holyoke, Edward, 272.
 Holyoke, Edward A., 267.
 Hotels, 271.
 Incorporation, 263.
 Ireson, Benjamin, 273.
 Lafayette, 272.
 Lee House, 272.
 Loring, George B., 266.
 Mosson, David, 271.
 Mugford, James, 266, 271.
 Neck, 263, 271.
 North Church, 271.
 Orne, Azor, 267.

Patriotism, 265.
Poets, 270.
Population, 263.
Powder House, 273.
Prince, 267.

Russell, 267.

St. Michael's Church, 271.
Schools, 263.
Sewall, Samuel, 267.
Shoe Manufactories, 264.
Small pox, 269.

Story, Isaac, 267.
Story, Joseph, 267, 273.
Streets, 269.
Summer Resort, 270.

Town Hall, 273.
Topography, 263.
Tucker's Wharf, 273.

Valuation, 263.

Ware, B. P. jr., 271.
Washington, George, 273.

BEVERLY.

Balch, John, 275.
Beverly Bridge, 276.
Browne, William, 279.
Bury, William, 280.

Conant, Roger, 275, 278.
Cotton Mill, 278.
Churches, 281.
Commerce, 286.

Deed, 278.
Derby, Richard, 276.
Dodge, C. L., 269.

Eastern R. R., 276.
Ellinwood, R., 277.

Farms, 277.
Fire Department, 289.

Gray, William, 286.
Groce, Obadiah, 288.

Hale, John, 281.
Halls, 288.
Harbor, 280.
Hill, Hugh, 285.
Hills, 279-80.
House, first, 277.

Indians, 278, 282.
Industries, 277.

Military, 282, 289.

Name of Town, 278.
Nautilus, 285.

Ponds and Lake, 280.
Postal centres, 277.
Privateers, 285.

Rantoul, R., 288.
Revolutionary War, 283.
Riot, 285.
Ryall Side, 277.

School houses, 288.
Stages, 276.
Streets, 280.

Taxation, 287.
Thorndike, Iarnel, 288.
Topography, 275.
Town Officers, 278.

Webbers, 277.
West Beach, 278.
Wenham W. W., 276.
Woodbury, John, 275.
Woodbury, William, 275.

MANCHESTER.

Bartol, Rev. C. A., 292.
Booth, J. B., 293.

Furniture, 291.

Hesperus, Wreck of, 296.

Jeffry Creek, 290.
Jeffry, William, 290.

Magnolia, 294.

Norman's Woe, 296.

Population, 291.

Rafe's Chasm, 296.

Singing Beach, 292.
Summer Residences, 291-3.

WENHAM.

Asbury Grove, 298.

Churches, 297.

Enon, 297.

Farming, 297.

Fisk, John, 297.

Lakes, 298.

Naumkeag, 297.

Peters, Hugh, 297.
Population, 298.

Railways, 298-9.

Statistics, 298.

TOPSFIELD AND MIDDLETON.

Breck, Daniel, 301.

Cleveland, E. L., 301.

Church in Middleton, 302.

Churches in Topsfield, 300.

Endicott, John, 301.

Estes, Mary, 300.

Fuller, Thomas, 302.

Gilbert, Thomas, 300.

Gingell, John, 302.

History of Middleton, 302.

Hobbs, Abigail, 300.

Huntington, Elisha, 301.

Indians, 300.

Industries in Middleton, 301.

Kimball, Jacob, 301.

New meadows, 300.

Peabody, Nathaniel, 301.

Settlement of Topsfield, 300.

Statistics of Topsfield, 301.

Statistics of Middleton, 302.

Wildes, Sarah, 300.

Wilkins, Bray, 302.

Fine Jewelry.
COIN SILVER & SILVER PLATED WARES.

A Fine Stock, at Very Low Prices.



**CAKE BASKETS, EPERGNES, CASTERS, PICKLE JARS,
BUTTER DISHES, SYRUP PITCHERS, ETC.**

Knives, Forks, Spoons, Ladles, Nut Picks, Champagne Taps, Etc.

SPECTACLES AND EYE GLASSES.

WATCH & JEWELRY REPAIRING A SPECIALTY.

JOHN P. PEABODY,
227 & 229 Essex Street, Salem.

The Globe Gas Light Company,

Office, 54 Kilby Street, Cor. Water Street,

BOSTON.



GEO. B. LORING, President.

PELHAM BONNEY, Treasurer.

FREDK. A. BROWN, } Gen. Agents.
JOHN A. FLETCHER, }

CONTRACTORS FOR LIGHTING STREETS.

Manufacturers and Dealers in

Vapor Burners, Globe Naphtha, Street
Lanterns, Lamp Posts, Etc.

This Company is Prepared to Contract to

LIGHT THE STREETS OF CITIES & TOWNS

In a most satisfactory manner, furnishing a light equal in brilliancy to Coal Gas.

Contracts taken at a specified rate per lamp, the Company furnishing the gas apparatus, material, and employing men to light and take care of the lamps.

The Apparatus used by the Company consists of a cylinder-shaped tank placed upon the outside of the lantern, a connecting tube, and a burner or gas generator, all of which can be attached to any street lantern.

This system of street lighting has been adopted by a large number of cities and towns, among which are the following:

Worcester,	Mass.	Portland, Maine.	Norwich, Conn.
Newton,	"	Lewiston, "	Danbury, "
Hyde Park,	"	Auburn, "	Utica, New York.
Chelsea,	"	Augusta, "	Hudson, "
Watertown,	"	Burlington, Vermont.	Watertown, "
Newburyport,	"	Bennington, "	Cohoes, "
Gloucester,	"	Morrisville, "	Cincinnati, Ohio.
New Bedford,	"	New Haven, Conn.	Davenport, Iowa.
Lynn,	"	Waterbury, "	Rock Island, Ill.
Taunton,	"	New Britain, "	San Jose, California.
Bangor, Maine.	"	New London, "	

And over 200 other places.

CORRESPONDENCE SOLICITED.



DRY AND FANCY GOODS.

Frank Cousins'

BEE-HIVE,

172 ESSEX STREET,

SALEM.



OUR STORE occupies the best business location in Salem, and by careful attention and low prices, we hope to merit a continuance of the patronage so liberally bestowed in the past.

We offer
a most
Extensive
Line of



Silver,
Gold,
and
Bronze
Goods.

French and American Clocks, Spectacles, Eye Glasses, &c.

STANDARD GOODS AT THE LOWEST PRICES.

DANIEL LOW,

Corner Store, Under First Church, Corner of Essex and
Washington Streets, Salem.

J. W. & J. S. MOULTON,

PHOTOGRAPHERS, PUBLISHERS, AND FINE ART DEALERS,

Respectfully announce as among their latest novelties a new series of SALEM VIEWS for the Stereoscope, comprising recent views of all the public Buildings, Streets, Churches, Old Houses, and places of historical interest. As this makes the 10th series of Salem Views we have taken, we can guarantee our patrons that our past experience has been a great advantage to us, and that this series will excel all our previous efforts. Price \$1.00 per dozen, 10 cents each. All orders by mail promptly filled at our retail Salesroom, No. 242½ Essex Street. A FULL LINE OF FRAMES, CHROMOS, PASSEPARTOUTS, &c., AT LOWEST PRICES. ALL STYLES OF FRAMES MADE TO ORDER AT OUR PHOTOGRAPH GALLERY, No 206 ESSEX ST. WE MAKE EVERYTHING PERTAINING TO THE PHOTOGRAPHIC ART. LANDSCAPE AND SCIENTIFIC Photography A SPECIALTY.

Thankful for the kind patronage of the public in the past, we respectfully ask for a continuance of the same.

J. W. & J. S. MOULTON,

206 & 242 1-2 ESSEX STREET, SALEM, MASS.

DANIEL T. SMITH,
(FORMERLY JESSE SMITH),
HOROLOGIST,
AND DEALER IN
American and Foreign Watches, Watch Furniture,
Gentlemen's Jewelry,
FRENCH AND AMERICAN CLOCKS,

— ALSO —

Spectacles, Eye Glasses, Thermometers, Etc.
234 ESSEX ST., CORNER WASHINGTON,
Particular attention to Fine Watch Repairing.
Standard Time ascertained by Transit observations.

THE SALEM POST
— AND —
ESSEX COUNTY ADVERTISER.

A Weekly Family Newspaper, devoted to
Literature, Politics and local and general matters
of interest.

Advertisements inserted at reasonable rates.

SUBSCRIPTION \$2.00 A YEAR.

PUBLISHED AT 224 ESSEX STREET,
SALEM.

FRANCIS PUTNAM,
FLORIST,
GREEN HOUSE AND BEDDING PLANTS
OF EVERY VARIETY.
CUT FLOWERS, BOUQUETS, & FLORAL DESIGNS
OF EVERY DESCRIPTION.
GARDENS LAID OUT.
SALE GREEN HOUSES,
AT
CROMBIE STREET, SALEM.

Green House and
Gardens in North Salem. }

BLACK DRESS GOODS,
Silks, Cashmeres, Alpacas, &c., &c.
THE BEST STOCK OF
BLACK SILKS
IN THE CITY.
HOUSEKEEPING GOODS.

ONE PRICE ONLY.



PEABODY'S.

**TRIMMINGS, BUTTONS, HOSIERY, GLOVES,
LACES, AND LACE GOODS.**

MILLINERY, CORSETS, SKIRTS, &c.

The Largest Stock.

The Lightest Store.

The Lowest Prices.

The Best Treatment.

JOHN P. PEABODY,
227 & 229 ESSEX STREET, SALEM.

THE
JOURNAL OF THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND
VOLUME 111
PART 1
2011



Published by the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland
21, BEDFORD SQUARE, LONDON, W.C.1A 2EJ
Telephone: 020 7612 1800
Fax: 020 7612 1801
Email: subscriptions@rapinstitute.org
Website: www.rapinstitute.org
The Journal is published quarterly by the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 21, Bedford Square, London, W.C.1A 2EJ. The subscription price of Volume 111, 2011, is £120 (US \$180) per institution, £30 (US \$45) per individual member. The subscription price includes postage and insurance. The subscription price of Volume 111, 2011, is £120 (US \$180) per institution, £30 (US \$45) per individual member. The subscription price includes postage and insurance. The subscription price of Volume 111, 2011, is £120 (US \$180) per institution, £30 (US \$45) per individual member. The subscription price includes postage and insurance.

With many pleasant
recollections of the
past

Winfield J. Nevins

Oat Pasture Hill
Aug. 22, 1903

**This preservation photocopy was made at BookLab, Inc.,
in compliance with copyright law. The paper
is Weyerhaeuser Cougar Opaque Natural,
which exceeds ANSI Standard
Z39.48-1984.
1992**

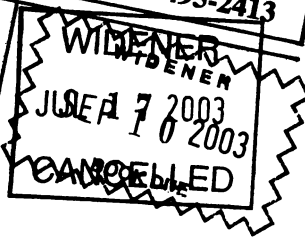






Borrower must return this item on or before
the last date stamped below. If another user
places a recall for this item, the borrower will
be notified of the need for an earlier return.
*Non-receipt of overdue notices does not exempt
the borrower from overdue fines.*

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413



Please handle with care.
Thank you for helping to preserve
library collections at Harvard

